

VANCOUVER PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1383 04899 9497

**SPE-M.T.  
J910.92  
B613b**

**Special Collections  
Vancouver Public Library**

SCURTIS.  
BINDER.







*John May Wingfield 1845  
for his affectionate God father John May*

BIOGRAPHICAL CONVERSATIONS

ON THE

MOST EMINENT VOYAGERS.

LONDON :

RICHARD CLAY, PRINTER, BREAD STREET HILL.

BIOGRAPHICAL CONVERSATIONS  
ON THE  
MOST EMINENT VOYAGERS  
OF DIFFERENT NATIONS;  
FROM COLUMBUS TO COOK.

COMPREHENDING  
DISTINCT NARRATIVES OF THEIR PERSONAL ADVENTURES.

BY THE  
REV. WILLIAM BINGLEY, M.A. F.L.S.  
LATE OF PETER-HOUSE, CAMBRIDGE,  
AND AUTHOR OF ANIMAL BIOGRAPHY, ETC.

---


*DESIGNED FOR THE USE OF YOUNG PERSONS.*

---

NEW EDITION, WITH WOOD CUTS.

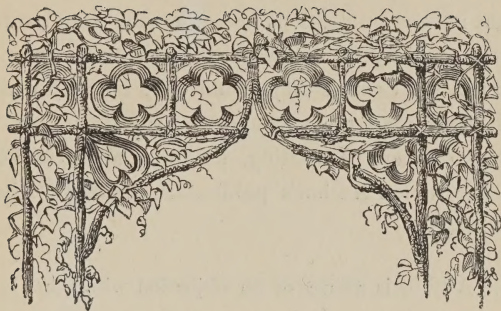
LONDON:  
PRINTED FOR THE  
SOCIETY FOR PROMOTING CHRISTIAN KNOWLEDGE:  
SOLD AT THE DEPOSITORY,  
GREAT QUEEN STREET, LINCOLN'S INN FIELDS;  
AND BY ALL BOOKSELLERS.

1840.



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2023 with funding from  
Vancouver Public Library





## PREFACE.

---

ALTHOUGH this little work has been drawn up for the purpose only of furnishing a biographical account of travel, yet the Author trusts that the narratives which he has inserted may also in some degree lead to an acquirement of geographical knowledge. With this view he would recommend to his young readers, that they should not peruse them without immediate reference to maps, that they may trace the course of the voyagers, and ascertain the situation of those islands, countries, and places which are mentioned.

As the work is designed exclusively for the use of young persons, the nautical and other technical phraseology has almost wholly been omitted; and the style

has been rendered in every respect as simple and comprehensive as possible. The descriptions of many important natural productions have likewise been omitted, because such would not only have too much extended the work, but because they would have essentially interfered either with the narratives or the discussion. If accounts of these be wanting, they may all be found by reference to the Author's publication entitled "Useful Knowledge."

The Author is aware of an objection which has been made to abridgments: that their tendency is to prevent the reader from referring to the originals, and thereby to yield a superficial and unsatisfactory knowledge. With respect to the present work, he trusts that this objection will not be found to apply. The narratives that he has inserted, are (consistently with the plan he had in view) necessarily so concise, that he hopes their tendency will be found rather to stimulate to further inquiry, than of themselves to satisfy the minds of his readers.

CHARLOTTE STREET, BLOOMSBURY,  
*London, May 23, 1818.*

## CONTENTS.

### CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.

[Page 1.]

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| First Voyage..... Aug. 1492 — Mar. 1493 ...    | 9    |
| Second Voyage..... Sept. 1493 — June, 1496 ... | 19   |
| Third Voyage..... May, 1498 — Nov. 1498 ...    | 25   |
| Fourth Voyage..... May, 1502 — Nov. 1504 ...   | 28   |

### AMERICUS VESPUCIUS.

[Page 36.]

|               |                           |    |
|---------------|---------------------------|----|
| Voyages ..... | May, 1497 — Oct. 1498 ... | 38 |
|---------------|---------------------------|----|

### FERDINAND DE MAGALHAENS, OR MAGELLAN.

[Page 45.]

|                                   |                            |    |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------|----|
| First Voyage round the World..... | Aug. 1519 — Sept. 1522 ... | 48 |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------|----|

## FERDINANDO CORTES.

[Page 59.]

PAGE

|  |    |
|--|----|
| Narrative of the Conquest of Mexico..... | 62 |
|--|----|

## FRANCIS PIZARRO.

[Page 78.]

|   |    |
|---|----|
| Narrative of the Conquest of Peru ..... | 80 |
|---|----|

## SIR FRANCIS DRAKE.

[Page 93.]

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Expedition across the Isthmus of Panama .....           | 96  |
| Voyage round the World ..... Dec. 1577 — Sept. 1580 ... | 103 |

## CAPTAIN THOMAS JAMES.

[Page 112.]

Voyage undertaken for the Discovery of a North-West Passage.

Apr. 1631 — Oct. 1632 ... 113



## CAPTAIN WILLIAM DAMPIER.

[Page 125.]

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| Adventures in America .....                             | 126  |
| Expedition across the Isthmus of Panama.....            | 132  |
| Voyage round the World ..... Aug. 1683 — Sept. 1691 ... | 134  |

## CAPTAIN WOODES ROGERS.

[Page 149.]

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Voyage round the World, including the History of Alexander Selkirk. |     |
| June, 1708 — Oct. 1711 ...  | 151 |

## LORD GEORGE ANSON.

[Page 166.]

|                              |                            |     |
|------------------------------|----------------------------|-----|
| Voyage round the World ..... | Aug. 1740 — June, 1744 ... | 171 |
|------------------------------|----------------------------|-----|

## ADMIRAL HONOURABLE JOHN BYRON.

[Page 189.]

|  |                            |     |
|--|----------------------------|-----|
| Shipwreck of the Wager, and Adventures in his return to England. |                            |     |
|  | Sept. 1740 — Nov. 1745 ... | 190 |
| Voyage round the World .....                                     | July, 1764 — May, 1766 ... | 205 |

## CAPTAIN SAMUEL WALLIS.

[Page 215.]

PAGE

Voyage round the World ..... Aug. 1766 — May, 1768 ... 216

---

## CAPTAIN PHILIP CARTERET.

[Page 234.]

Voyage round the World ..... Aug. 1766 — Mar. 1769 ... 234

---

## CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

[Page 248.]

First Voyage round the World..... May, 1768 — June, 1771 ... 254

Second Voyage round the World..... July, 1772 — July, 1775 ... 288

Third Voyage round the World, to the time of his Death.

July, 1776 — Feb. 1779 ... 317

Narrative of Events subsequently to the Death of Captain Cook.

Feb. 1799 — Apr. 1780 ... 354



## INTRODUCTION.

---

AT the commencement of the preceding discussions relative to eminent British Characters, it was stated that Frederic Montagu, accompanied by his tutor, the Rev. Mr. Allen, had arrived at Seaford Castle in Devonshire; whither they had been invited, by Sir Charles Irwin, to pass a few months previously to Frederic making his final preparation for the university. It was further stated, that the family of Sir Charles, at that time, consisted of himself, Lady Irwin, their son Edmund, a youth





THE PERSONS PRESENT.

---

SIR CHARLES IRWIN, Baronet ; *resident at Seaford Castle, on the coast of Devonshire.*

LADY IRWIN.

EDMUND IRWIN, *aged seventeen ; their son.*

LOUISA, *aged sixteen,* }  
MARIA, *aged twelve,* } *Daughters of Sir Charles and Lady Irwin.*

FREDERIC MONTAGU, *aged eighteen ; a nephew of Sir Charles, and on a visit at his house.*

Rev. ALFRED ALLEN, *tutor to Frederic Montagu.*





## EMINENT VOYAGERS.

---

### FIRST EVENING.

FREDERIC and Edmund having prepared themselves according to the directions of Mr. Allen, for discussing the life, and reading a narrative of the voyages of Columbus, joined the evening party as usual, in Sir Charles Irwin's library. Mr. Allen introduced the subject of their present discussion by observing, that books of travels were not only capable of yielding much amusement, but of imparting very important information. "When the relations they contain are accurate," he said, "they serve as a foundation of geography, not only teaching us the situation, character, and external appearance, but describing the natural productions of countries; and the habits and customs, the conditions and polity of their inhabitants.

Sir Charles Irwin remarked, that every mind which has the leisure or power to extend its views, must be desirous of knowing in what proportion Providence has distributed the blessings of nature, or the advantages of art among the several nations of the earth. Hence, he continued, the adventurer upon unknown coasts, and the describer of distant regions, is always welcomed as one who has laboured for the pleasure of others, and who is able both to enlarge our knowledge and rectify our opinions.

*Louisa.*—I have hitherto chiefly read books of travels with a view to personal adventures. My curiosity has been excited by the dangers and disasters experienced by the traveller, and by the modes in which he extricates himself from them.

*Sir Charles.*—That, my dear Louisa, is by no means the view with which you ought to read such books. Your attention, it is true, may be additionally excited by these, but the information that is really useful, is to be found almost entirely independent of them. The narrations, which Mr. Allen and I have directed your brother and Frederic Montagu to draw up, will, however, of necessity be confined almost exclusively to personal adventure; because they are meant only to be biographical.

*Mr. Allen.*—And yet, Sir Charles, if the young gentlemen pay due attention, they will find no difficulty in occasionally introducing both geographical illustration, and such sketches respecting foreign people and countries, as may tend to render their narratives not only more amusing, but of much more permanent utility than could otherwise be the case. It is true that what is thus done must be very concise; because the arrangement that has been laid down for them, requires their whole narratives to be so.

*Frederic.*—In the abstract of the voyages of Columbus, which I have prepared for this evening, I have not been able to deviate much from his personal history.



This I have found so full of incident, that I must have lengthened my narrative much beyond the bounds that have been prescribed, had I entered into many particulars relative to the countries he visited, or to the different people with whom he had intercourse.

Edmund here, for a moment, interrupted the subject by observing that, of all the inventions and improvements which the art and industry of man have discovered, and brought to perfection, none seems so universally useful, profitable, and necessary, as that of navigation.

*Sir Charles.*—Some writers, Edmund, will not allow it to be called the invention of man. They rather consider it the execution of directions given by the Almighty to Noah; since the first ship that we read of was the ark of Noah, built by the immediate command and appointment of God.

*Mr. Allen.*—But this ark, or ship, if it may so be called, had neither oars, sails, masts, yards, rudder, nor any kind of rigging. It was especially guided by Divine Providence, and had no particular port or coast to steer to: it had only to float on the surface of the waters, till those being dried up, it rested on the mountains of Ararat, as we read in the sacred writings.

*Louisa.*—Ships are now guided through the sea by the aid of the mariner's compass.

*Sir Charles.*—I wish, Louisa, you would describe that instrument.

*Louisa.*—The mariner's compass is a fine magnetic needle, or slender piece of steel wire, formed like the hand of a clock or watch, and exactly balanced or suspended on a point, so as to turn with great ease all round. By its magnetic property, one extremity always directs itself towards the north, and the other consequently towards the south. This needle or index is fixed in a box, and underneath it the points of the compass, as they are called, or the different quarters of the horizon, east, west, north, and south, are marked on a card.

*Sir Charles.*—And how is a vessel navigated by means of the compass?

*Louisa.*—The magnetic needle always points towards the north, and, therefore, by observing the course or direction of the ship, that is, which way her head is turned, it is easy to know to what point she is steered; and, by keeping a regular account of the distance she traverses, the seamen can go with great exactness from one place to another. I cannot comprehend how navigation could have been conducted before the invention of the compass.

*Mr. Allen.*—It was then a tedious and precarious operation, managed by observing the position of particular stars, especially the north or polar star; and, indeed, was seldom performed out of the sight of land. But the instrument of which you speak, enables the mariner to traverse every part of the ocean, with nearly as much certainty as that with which the carrier conducts his carriage along a well-beaten road. You have said that one of the extremities of the magnet always points towards the north. In such assertion you are not quite correct; for there are certain parts of the world, in which it varies from that direction. This variation of the compass, as we shall soon see, was first observed by Columbus, but the cause of it is altogether inexplicable.

*Edmund.*—To this great navigator, CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS, the world is indebted for the discovery of America.

*Louisa.*—Of the American islands you mean, my dear brother, not the continent of America. The honour of that discovery, you know, is due to Americus Vesputius, a native of Florence; who, as you will no doubt recollect to have read, gave to it his own name.

*Edmund.*—That this honour was claimed by Americus I know; but, when we come to relate the account of his voyages, I think I shall be able to convince you that it was justly due to Columbus.

*Frederic.*—But perhaps neither Columbus nor Vespuccius was the original European discoverer of America. The Welsh historians relate that Madoc, a prince of Wales, quitted his native land more than three hundred years before either of these persons was born; and that, sailing westward, he arrived at the regions of which you are speaking. As some evidence for the authority of this tradition, it is asserted that a tribe of Indians has lately been discovered in North America, which speak a language that bears some resemblance to the Welsh language.

*Louisa.*—You surprise me, Frederic! I never heard of this discovery before.

*Mr. Allen.*—It is true that such an account has been given, but the traditions on which it is founded are altogether so confused and discordant, and the reports concerning the existing Welsh Indians so vague, that they are each unworthy of credit.—But, Edmund, proceed with your account of Columbus. The exact place of his birth has not been ascertained: there is, however, no doubt but he was a native of some spot within the republic of Genoa: and, I think, there is evidence that he was born about the year 1447.

*Edmund.*—In a life of Columbus written by one of his sons, he is said to have descended from an ancient and honourable family.

*Frederic.*—That may have been the case, but it is generally believed that his father was a wool-comber, and that Columbus himself worked at that trade in his youth.

*Edmund.*—Then he must have left it very early, for he first went to sea at the age of fourteen; and he had, in the mean time, been accurately instructed in the various branches of navigation.

*Sir Charles.*—Columbus was not one of those persons whose abilities remain concealed till late in life; and who, after a youth spent in indolence or vice, have, as it were, awakened at a more advanced age, in the ardour and activity of genius.

*Edmund.*—No, Sir ; having chosen his profession, he hastened to qualify himself for the honourable discharge of its duties. He is said to have imbibed the instructions imparted by his teachers with surprising quickness. He soon rendered himself master of the Latin tongue, and attained a competent knowledge of geometry, astronomy, drawing ; of every thing in short, that was considered requisite to form a skilful navigator.

*Louisa.*—You have stated that he was sent to sea when very young ; whither did he first sail ?

*Frederic.*—In a merchant ship, to the Mediterranean. This was in a subordinate capacity ; but, when not more than twenty years of age, he is said to have undertaken a voyage of discovery, to ascertain whether the frigid zone were habitable. Of this voyage, however, we have little further account than that, in February, 1467, he had sailed a hundred leagues north of Iceland : that, when he was there, the sea was not frozen, and that the tides were so great that they rose and fell a height of near forty-five feet.

*Edmund.*—Subsequently to this, Columbus sailed, apparently in a trading vessel, to a Portuguese settlement on the coast of Africa. His next adventure was, as an officer, in a small squadron fitted out to cruise against the Venetians and Turks. In this service he established his character not only for skill and dexterity in naval affairs, but also for bravery.

*Frederic.*—During this expedition his valour was tried in many severe conflicts : and his life was often exposed to danger. On one hazardous occasion, in particular, he escaped with great difficulty. Having attacked, with the rest of the fleet, some Venetian galleys, deeply and richly laden : in the ardour of the combat, he grappled one of the enemy's vessels ; and, in this situation, fast locked to his antagonist by strong hooks and chains, the ship in which he served, took fire. In an instant all was terror, outcry, and confusion. But Columbus, distinguished as much by his coolness and

presence of mind, as by his bravery, threw himself into the sea ; and, partly by swimming, and partly by the support of an oar which he found accidentally within his reach, he got safe to land. This engagement took place off the harbour of Lisbon, and at the distance of nearly two leagues from the shore.

*Louisa.*—The valour and intrepidity of Columbus, on this occasion, must have been truly admirable, and his personal strength very great, to have enabled him to swim so far as you have mentioned. What befel him afterwards ?

*Frederic.*—Induced by the encouragement which, about this period, was given by the government of Portugal, to every person skilled in navigation, Columbus determined to continue in Lisbon, under a hope of being able to obtain employment in the Portuguese navy. Not long afterwards, he married the daughter of Perestrello, a celebrated Portuguese navigator ; and thereby obtained, what to him was an invaluable acquisition, the journals, charts, and other papers of her father. From these he ascertained what had been the objects of the Portuguese rulers, in attempting certain maritime discoveries towards the south ; on which they had for some time before seemed strongly bent.

*Louisa.*—And what were these objects, Frederic ?

*Frederic.*—Hitherto all the commerce with the spice islands, in the East Indies, had been engrossed by the Venetians. The Portuguese government, desirous of sharing in the profits of this valuable commerce, had been anxiously endeavouring to ascertain the nearest possible course thither.

*Edmund.*—And Columbus, after an inspection of the papers of Perestrello, and a due consideration of the subject, entertained an opinion that he might be able to discover both a shorter and safer passage than that by the southern point of the continent of Africa. He was aware that the earth was round ; and he consequently imagined it to be very possible to arrive at those regions

by sailing directly westward. In this opinion he was strengthened by a notion, prevalent among the ancients, that the ocean encompassed the whole earth; and by the information of Venetian and other travellers, that countries which they had visited beyond Persia and India, stretched out to a great distance towards the east.

*Frederic.*—His mind became so strongly possessed with the practicability of this scheme, that he was determined, if possible, to engage some of the European powers in the accomplishment of it. None of them, however, had sufficient reach of thought to comprehend his plans, nor sufficient liberality to encourage a speculation apparently so hazardous.

*Mr. Allen.*—By many persons Columbus was considered a mere speculative dreamer. He was rejected by the great, because he was not himself a man of rank; and was repelled by the learned, because they were mortified that an obscure pilot should have projected plans which had escaped the discernment of cultivated minds. We are told that he first applied to his own countrymen, the Genoese; then to the government of Portugal, then to that of Spain, and lastly to Henry the Seventh of England. But all these applications were unsuccessful; and had not the perseverance of Columbus been equal to his genius, the American continent might yet have been unknown to the inhabitants of Europe.

*Edmund.*—Columbus, who at this time appears to have resided in Spain, was about to quit that country for England, where his brother Bartholomew was then resident;—

*Frederic.*—But he was prevented from so doing by Isabella, queen of Ferdinand the Fifth of Spain. She desired him to relinquish his intention of soliciting the patronage of other courts, and determined to obtain from the king an assent to promote his views; and at last procured him the appointment of admiral of all the seas he might explore, and governor of all the continents and islands he might discover. On a final arrangement



with Columbus, it was stipulated that these offices should be hereditary in his family; and that the tenth part of every thing bought, bartered, found, or otherwise obtained within the bounds of his admiralship, abating only the charge of the conquest, should be his absolute property. This arrangement having been completed, Columbus desired that a small fleet should immediately be equipped and put under his command; and, to demonstrate his confidence in its success, he offered to advance an eighth part of the money that should be necessary for building the ships, provided he were allowed a corresponding share of advantages resulting from the enterprise. Orders were consequently issued, and a squadron consisting of three vessels was prepared for him.

*Sir Charles.*—What were the sizes of these ships?

*Frederic.*—The largest of them was of inconsiderable dimensions, and the others not much above the size of ordinary boats. They were victualled for twelve months, and had on board ninety men, few of whom appear to have ever before been far out of the sight of land. I will now read, if you please, the notes that I have made of the occurrences during the voyage.

#### NARRATIVE OF THE FIRST VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

EARLY in the morning of Friday, the third of August, 1492, the squadron commanded by Columbus sailed from the harbour of Palos, a sea-port of Andalusia. It passed the Canary Islands, and, proceeding in a westerly direction, was next day out of sight of the land. Columbus was now on the sea without any chart to direct him, and without any knowledge of the tides and currents that might interrupt his progress, and many of the sailors, reflecting on the hazardous enterprise in which they were engaged, were overwhelmed with dismay.

Columbus himself was patient and persevering. Skilful and experienced in naval affairs, he was almost constantly



upon deck, watching the flight of birds, ascertaining the depth of the ocean, and marking the appearance of weeds that floated upon its surface. On the sixteenth of August he pointed out to his disheartened crew what he considered a signal of their near approach to land, a great quantity of weeds floating past the ship. Several birds also flew over it in a westerly direction. The vessels proceeded: for several days their course was continued, but still no land was visible.

On the fourteenth of September, when distant nearly two hundred leagues from the Canaries, the magnetic needle, or compass, was observed to vary from its direction to the polar star, and incline toward the west. This, though now a familiar occurrence, occasioned serious alarm in the breast even of Columbus, and filled all his associates with terror. They were far from land, and far from the track of any other navigators. All around them was unknown, and this guide, on which they knew even their commander relied, appeared no longer entitled to their confidence. With astonishing presence of mind, however, he told them that, in particular circumstances, he knew the needle would not point to the pole, but that it would describe a compass round it; a solution which, though wholly unsatisfactory to himself, had the effect of silencing, for a while, the murmurs of his crew.

The vessels having continued their course for some weeks after this, without any appearance of land, the dissatisfaction of the seamen gradually broke out into greater violence. They asserted that Columbus was as ignorant as themselves into what danger he might be navigating the ships; and declared that they would be deceived no longer. They insisted on returning immediately to Spain. Some of them even proposed to throw him into the sea, as a visionary projector, whose death would never be inquired into, or, if inquired into, would be justifiable on the ground of his rashness and folly. In the midst of this disaffection, Columbus was

steady and cheerful. He soothed his companions, and expostulated with them; he endeavoured, at one time, to influence their desire of riches,—at another, their love of fame: he then assumed a tone of authority, told them of the vengeance of their sovereign, and of the disgrace and infamy they would suffer, if they abandoned him in the prosecution of the undertaking. All this, however, was to little purpose: they still insisted on returning. In these alarming circumstances, Columbus perceived that opposition could be of no avail; and, at length, declared that he would yield to their importunity, if, at the end of three days more, no land should be discovered. This proposal appeared to the sailors neither extravagant nor unfair; and the admiral did not hazard much by restricting himself to so short a time. The notices of the approach to land were almost indubitable. The vessels had passed through an abundance of floating weeds: many land birds, at different times, had passed the ships: a staff, curiously wrought and adorned, had been taken up floating on the sea; and a cane, which seemed to have been recently cut; and a thorn, with red fruit upon it, were also found. These tokens were to him joyous and decisive. He was confident that he could not be far distant from the land; and he did not fail to make use of them in diminishing the fears, and elevating the hopes of his associates.

At length, in the night of the eleventh of October, Columbus, who had himself been on the deck for several hours, in anxious suspense, perceived a light at some distance from the ships. It appeared like the light of a candle; was in motion, and once or twice disappeared, and was again visible. At the dawn of morning, a flat island, thickly clad with trees, was seen. The inhabitants of this island, who were very numerous, ran to the beach in astonishment and admiration at the sight of the ships. They imagined them to have been some kind of sea-monsters, having never before seen vessels larger than their own boats or canoes.



Columbus, on landing, gave to the island, which is one of the Bahamas, the name of San Salvador, or St. Saviour, in humble gratitude to the Almighty, who had delivered him from so many dangers. Finding the Indians of this island a quiet and docile people, he distributed among them red caps, strings of glass beads, and other trifles, with which they were greatly delighted.

They were naked, well formed, and of an olive colour, though some of them were painted with black, some with white, and others red. Wholly unacquainted with the use of iron, they employed, as cutting instruments, a kind of sharp stone, which they found at the bottoms of their rivers. When shown a naked sword, they laid hold of it by the edge, without any idea that they should cut their hands by so doing.

After the ships had continued at San Salvador a few days, they proceeded southward, in search of two large islands, which, by the signs of the Indians, Columbus

had been led to understand were not far distant. In about ten days, they arrived at the northern coast of one of these, which was called by the inhabitants Cuba. Delighted with the appearance of this island, varied by hills, plains, and rivers, and covered, in several parts, with trees and luxuriant foliage, Columbus directed a party of his officers and men to proceed into the interior, for the purpose of more accurate examination. At some distance from the coast, they found a village, containing about a thousand inhabitants. The chief, or cacique, as he was called, treated them with the utmost respect. He invited them, by signs, to partake of refreshments; and conducted them to a house, where they were each placed on a wooden seat in the shape of a beast, having short legs, and the heads with eyes and ears of gold: the tails were as broad as the seats, and were raised in such manner as to serve for leaning against. The Indians themselves sate on the ground around their guests; and successively approached, with the utmost humility, to kiss their feet and hands, believing them to have descended from heaven.

The Spaniards passed through several other villages. Some of these had been entirely forsaken by their inhabitants; who, alarmed at the approach of strangers, had fled into the woods. But in others, where the people remained, they were treated with great respect. They then returned to Columbus, and reported what they had seen.

He examined some other parts of the coast and of the adjacent country, and, on the fifth of December, sailed for the other island of which he had been informed. He reached it on the following day. This island, in its general appearance, and in its various productions, was considered, by the navigators, to bear some resemblance to their own country. The admiral consequently named it *La Espagnola*, which has since been corrupted into *Hispaniola*.

As the inhabitants of this island, at the first approach,

of the ships, had fled from the coast into the interior of the country, it was not without difficulty that any of them could be discovered. By kindness and attention to such as were accidentally found, the others, however, by degrees, became familiar ; and, at last, even ventured to go on board the ships. As some of them wore, upon their bodies, ornaments of gold, the Spaniards, by signs, made anxious inquiry respecting this metal, and whether more of it could not be obtained. In consequence of this, some of the Indians, when they next visited the ships, carried with them thin pieces of gold, which they bartered for toys of different kinds ; but particularly for such as were made of tin, or other white metal, imagining that these came from heaven.

A lamentable accident occurred to the admiral's ship, while it was stationed off the island of Hispaniola. At midnight, while all the men, even those who ought to have been on watch, were asleep, she was borne by a strong current upon the rocks near the shore, and wrecked. The crew and part of the lading only were saved. The Indians, as soon as they were informed of the accident, rendered the most prompt and effectual assistance. Tempting as the plunder of European produce must have been to them, they gave every possible aid, not only by their own exertions, but with their canoes, in conveying the goods from the wreck to the shore. These, under the direction of their chief, they stored in two houses appointed for the purpose ; and afterwards restored to the admiral, with strict fidelity, every part of what had been saved.

Columbus, pleased both with the island and its inhabitants, resolved to establish there a Spanish colony. With this intention, he selected, from his different crews, thirty-nine men who were willing to be left. To these he gave directions to learn the language of the natives, to acquire a knowledge both of the country and the people, and to ascertain all the advantages that were to be derived from trading with them ; more especially in



gold, which, as he had ascertained, was one of the productions of the country. For their defence, he aided them in building a fort, with the timber of the vessel that had been wrecked, and directed them to construct houses for their residence. He also landed a few of the cannon, to be mounted on the fort. To inspire the inhabitants with a dread of the power of their new allies, he ordered some of the guns to be fired. The Indians, in terror, fell to the ground, believing the strangers able to command the thunder and lightning.

Columbus, having now accomplished one object of his voyage, the discovery of inhabited countries in the western parts of the world, resolved to return to Spain, for the purpose of making a report of this discovery, of prevailing upon other Spaniards to join his new colony in Hispaniola, and of obtaining authority from the Spanish government for making further discoveries.

During his voyage home, a dreadful storm overtook the remaining ships. The wind blew with the fury of a hurricane; and even Columbus began to fear, lest all knowledge and memory of his discoveries should be lost. The fury of the storm increased, and no hope of safety seemed to remain. In these circumstances, he adopted an expedient which would not, perhaps, have readily occurred to any one possessed of less composure and presence of mind than himself. He retired to his cabin, and wrote upon parchment a short account of his voyage, and of its success. This writing he folded up, sealed, and addressed to their majesties the king and queen of Spain. He then ordered a cask to be brought to him, wrapped the parchment in oiled cloth, surrounded it with wax, enclosed it in the cask, and, having carefully stopped this up, threw it into the sea. Nor was he satisfied with this. He prepared a similar packet, and placed it in another cask, which he attached, by a long rope, to the stern of the vessel, that, as he expresses himself, "when the ship sank, the cask might float on the water, and thus have the chance of being found."



Happily, however, the storm abated ; and not many days afterwards, namely, on the sixteenth of March, 1493, after an absence of about six months, he arrived in safety, in the port from which he had sailed.

*Louisa.*—And how was he received after the fatigues of his voyage ?

*Frederic.*—His vessels had been perceived at a distance ; and when they entered the harbour, the whole populace of the place flocked to see the man, from whose discoveries and adventures they naturally expected some extraordinary accounts. He was accompanied by several Indians, who had willingly allowed themselves to be conveyed from their native country. He had likewise brought many curiosities, several kinds



of animals, some gold and precious stones, and numerous specimens of the military weapons and domestic implements of the Indians.



*Louisa.*—But, the king and queen of Spain ; how did they receive him ?

*Frederic.*—They were no less delighted than their subjects ; and gave orders that Columbus should be conducted into the city of Barcelona, where the court then was, with all imaginable pomp. They received him, clad in their royal robes, and seated on a throne under a magnificent canopy. The king conferred upon him great honours : he appointed him viceroy, or governor, of all the islands he had discovered ; and these were now claimed to be the property of Spain.

*Louisa.*—Did you not describe them to have been all inhabited ? In some of them you mentioned that there were chiefs or kings ; how, then, could they have been considered the property of Spain ? I presume they must, of right, have belonged to those who inhabited, and had previously possessed them. Surely, the mere

circumstance of a few Spaniards having crossed the Atlantic, could not entitle them to regard the islands they had visited as their own.

*Frederic.*—In justice, I should certainly think not. Here the causes which lead to invasion, and conquest, among European nations, cannot be allowed at all to operate. The Spaniards had no pretence for interfering with the inhabitants of those islands, in the management of their own concerns.

*Mr. Allen.*—The principle on which they thus took possession, was far from a justifiable one. The chief pretence alleged not only for these, but for subsequent conquests by the Spaniards in America, was, that they might propagate the Christian faith among Pagans; and the pope assumed the extraordinary power of granting, in full right, to the sovereigns of Spain, the actual possession of all such countries as should thus be conquered and converted.

*Sir Charles.*—I fear the propagation of the Christian religion in the new world was, even originally, little more than a pretence. Subsequently it proved so; for, while the Spaniards, after the time of Columbus, were pretending to found this religion, they were solely bent upon plunder, and were guilty of the most atrocious and detestable cruelties against the unprotected and defenceless inhabitants.

Here Sir Charles Irwin observed, that the discussion respecting the life of Columbus, and the narrative of his first voyage, had already occupied so much time, that he wished to defer the remainder till the ensuing evening. This arrangement was assented to; and the party, shortly afterward, separated for the night.

## SECOND EVENING.

*Sir Charles.*—We will now, if you please, resume the account of Columbus. What, Frederic, was the particular design of his second voyage, and what were the preparations made for it?

*Frederic.*—Columbus was desirous of completing those discoveries that he had commenced; and he represented to the Spanish court the advantages that might be derived from them in so favourable a view, that a much more powerful squadron than the last was fitted out for him.

*Mr. Allen.*—How many vessels were now placed under his command?

*Frederic.*—Seventeen, of different size and strength. He had also no fewer than fifteen hundred seamen.

*Edmund.*—And was joined by many gentlemen of family and fortune, who were desirous of accompanying him, and sharing in his fame. I have also read, that he caused many kinds of plants, and young trees, to be put on board the vessels; with wheat, rye, oats, barley, and various kinds of seeds.

*Louisa.*—What was the particular object of Columbus in carrying out these?

*Edmund.*—To plant and sow them in countries which, till that time, had been destitute of such productions. But he chiefly intended them for the use of his newly-founded colony in Hispaniola.

*Frederic.*—For the use of the latter he also carried out a quantity of lime, bricks, and other materials of different kinds, for building.

## NARRATIVE OF THE SECOND VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

THE present squadron sailed from Cadiz in the morning of the twenty-sixth of September, 1493. Having cleared the Bay of Cadiz, Columbus steered, as he had before

done, towards the Canary Islands, and then, in a westerly direction, for Hispaniola. On the morning of the third of November, he passed a mountainous island, to which, as the day when it was discovered was Sunday, he gave the name of Dominica. In his progress he discovered other islands. One of these he called Marigalante, from the name of his ship; and another Santa Maria Guadaloupe, after a monastery of that name in Spain. A third he called Montserrat, on account of its great height and rocky appearance; and a fourth St. Mary Redonda, from its having been so round and upright, that it seemed impossible to ascend it without the aid of ladders.

On the twenty-first of October, Columbus landed at an Indian town on the north side of Hispaniola, and thence proceeded to his new settlement. It is impossible to describe the horror he experienced on discovering that the fort, and all the houses of his people, had been destroyed; the whole place desolate, and nothing remaining but a few ragged clothes. On further examination the bodies of eight Spaniards, and afterwards of three others, were found in the fields. They had apparently been dead about a month. Columbus was subsequently informed, that the Spaniards had excited the indignation and vengeance of the Indians, by their own overbearing and unjustifiable conduct. They had forcibly taken away their wives; and, having quarrelled among themselves, and separated into parties, an opportunity was given for the Indians to attack them by surprise. This was done in the night; the town was destroyed by fire, and the whole colony exterminated.

A misfortune so lamentable and unexpected was a source of the utmost grief and disappointment to Columbus. He immediately resolved to proceed, with his whole fleet, to some more favourable station. This he did; and, having anchored his ships near an Indian town, at some distance eastward of the former settlement, he fixed upon a spacious plain, as the spot for a new one.

There was, at this spot, an excellent river, and a large and commodious harbour. The adjacent country was fertile: and a lofty rock, on which a strong fort could easily be built commanded the whole extent of the plain. To this colony he gave the name of Isabella, in honour of the Queen of Spain.

After he had been here some time, Columbus dispatched one of his officers, Alonzo de Hojeda, with an escort of fifteen men, into the interior of the island, to explore some gold mines, that he had been informed were at a place called Cibao.

Subsequently to this he sent twelve ships of his fleet back to Spain, as of no further service to him; and forwarded by them a detailed account, in writing, of all his proceedings, of the nature of the country, and of various requisites which were yet wanting for the establishment and assistance of his infant colony.

Hojeda returned from Cibao, and gave so favourable an account of his success, that Columbus resolved to inspect the place himself. Attended by a considerable escort, part on foot and part on horseback, he set out from Isabella on the twelfth of March. After travelling for some days, over a rugged and difficult country, he reached the mines. Here he found grains of golden sand in the beds of the mountain torrents, and in such abundance as to induce him to order a fort to be immediately erected for the protection of such persons as he should station there to collect the gold.

Having returned to Isabella, and made arrangements for the security of his colony, Columbus was resolved to attempt some further discoveries in the western seas. He had received accounts from the Indians that there was an immense continent, westward of Hispaniola; and, on the twenty-fourth of April, 1494, he sailed in search of it.

About ten days after he had left the harbour of Isabella, Columbus discovered the high lands of Jamaica. As he approached the shore, he thought this the most

beautiful of all the islands he had yet seen. He was also astonished at the multitude of natives, who came off from it in canoes, to the ships. From Jamaica he directed his course towards Cuba. Having anchored his vessels and landed in one of the harbours of this island, a venerable chief approached ; and, presenting him with a basket of fruit, addressed him nearly in these words (as they were interpreted by one of the Indians from Hispaniola) : “ Whether you are divinities or mortal men, we know not. You are come into these countries with a force against which, were we inclined to resist, resistance would be folly. We are all therefore at your mercy ; but if you are men subject to mortality like ourselves, you cannot but know that, after this life there is another, wherein a very different portion is allotted to good and to bad men. If therefore you expect to die, and believe, with us, that every one is to be rewarded in a future state, according to his conduct in the present, you will do no injury to those, who offer none to you.”

Having experienced great difficulty from stormy weather, contrary winds, a rocky and almost impassable coast, and a want of wholesome provisions, Columbus determined to return to Isabella. He arrived there on the twenty-ninth of September ; and found that, in his absence, a plan had been concerted by several hostile Indian chiefs, to expel or destroy the Spaniards, and seize upon their property. His immediate resolution was, therefore, to adopt the most prompt and decisive measures against them. He assembled his whole military force, consisting of about two hundred infantry, twenty horsemen, and twenty or thirty wolf-dogs. Terrified at this new species of warfare, for these miserable Indians had never before been exposed to the fire of cannon, to the attack of ferocious monsters (which they believed the men on horseback to be), nor to be hunted down by bloodhounds, like beasts of chase, an immense assemblage of them were totally routed, multitudes were slain, and several of their chiefs fell into the hands of the victors.



After this the Spaniards imagined they had little to dread from any open attack of the Indians. The town of Isabella had been completed, and three strong forts built, in different parts, for the protection of it.



Columbus now resolved again to return to Europe, for the purpose of informing their Catholic majesties concerning several important subjects connected with his discoveries in the west. With this intention he sailed from Isabella on the tenth of March, 1496; and, about three months afterwards, arrived in Spain.

*Edmund.*—During his absence the enemies of Columbus had not been inactive. Several discontented persons, whom he had sent home in the fleet from Isabella, had circulated the most injurious reports concerning both his character and conduct.

*Louisa.*—Having had no opportunity of justifying himself, I fear these must have tended to injure him in the opinion of the Spanish court.



*Frederic*.—Yet he was received, both by the king and queen, with great apparent favour; and his presents of Indian beasts, birds, plants, warlike implements, ornamented girdles, masks having ears and eyes of gold, gold-dust, and pieces of gold, some as large as pigeons' eggs, were all extremely acceptable to their majesties. The explanations he gave of his conduct were also considered perfectly satisfactory. Yet, shortly afterwards, when he expressed a desire to return to Hispaniola, lest some disaster should occur in his absence, many difficulties were opposed to his so doing. He asked for eight ships, and a reinforcement of five hundred men; yet nearly twelve months elapsed before he could procure the equipment of two.

*Edmund*.—Which were laden only with provisions and military stores, and sailed without him.

*Frederic*.—It was of course a very important object with Columbus not to go out but with such an armament as would be sufficient for his purposes, both with respect to the colony he had established, and to his prosecution of further discoveries in the western seas. He consequently remained at the Spanish court to solicit the fitting out of a more efficient equipment than this. But by the vessels now sent, he forwarded instructions to his brother Bartholomew, whom he had left in the chief command at Isabella, to search the southern coast of the island; and, if he could find a convenient harbour, and a more eligible place for the settlement, to remove thither. These directions were obeyed; the search was made, an eligible place was discovered, and a new settlement was formed.

*Louisa*.—Whereabouts, Frederic?

*Frederic*.—Near the south-eastern extremity of the island, at a place afterwards called San Domingo, from its having been discovered on a Sunday. I will now proceed with the account of the third voyage of Columbus.

## NARRATIVE OF THE THIRD VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

NEARLY two years elapsed before this great navigator could obtain such an equipment as he desired. At length, however, on the eighteenth of May, 1498, he once again set sail; and now had under his command six ships of different sizes.

During about eight days of this voyage, the weather was so intensely hot, that even Columbus himself was not without alarm lest it might occasion the vessels to take fire. The men, from a fear of being suffocated, did not dare to go between the decks to secure the casks which contained the wine and the water, and which were falling to pieces by the hoops flying off them. The corn that was on board was parched, and the bacon and salt meat nearly fried.

Columbus, in this voyage, proceeded on a course considerably to the south of his former track; and, in the month of August, he saw a large and populous island, which he called Trinidad, or the Trinity; a name that he had promised to give to the first land he should on the present occasion discover. Proceeding onward, he afterwards approached a point of land toward the northwest, which he believed to have been an island, but which no doubt was part of the province of Paria, on the continent of America. He anchored in several places along the coast, and was amicably treated by the natives, who readily consented to exchange their golden ornaments for bits of tin, or little bells. In one instance he obtained a wreath of gold in return for a red nightcap. Some of the women had bracelets of pearl round their arms, which, by signs, they informed the Spaniards, were procured from a kind of oyster-shells that they found in the sea, at some distance westward.

On the twenty-second of August, the squadron arrived at the newly established colony of San Domingo. Here Columbus found that, during his absence, the Spaniards

whom he had left had quarrelled among themselves. Their dissensions still continued. A powerful party had mutinied, and separated from the rest. These, desirous of leading a wild kind of life, had fixed their habitations in an almost impregnable part of the island, and defied the whole power of Columbus. He found it would be vain to attempt their reduction by force; and therefore sent one of his captains with an offer of allowing such as chose it, to return, in one of the ships, to Spain. Several of them acceded to this arrangement; and the remainder were permitted to form a separate establishment in a distant part of the island.

About this time some valuable gold mines were discovered in the interior; and several of the colonists were permitted to reside near them, for the purpose of collecting the gold. This they chose to do at their own risk, agreeing as an equivalent for the privilege, to pay to the Spanish government a third part of the value of what they obtained.

In Spain the enemies of Columbus, envious of his success, and jealous of the favour he enjoyed, unremittingly exerted themselves to prejudice the court against him. Several of the men, whom, on account of their disorderly conduct, he had been compelled to send home, invented against him the most slanderous and disgraceful falsehoods. In consequence of incessant complaints, the king, at length, granted a commission to Francis de Bovadilla, a knight of the order of Calatrava, empowering him to proceed to San Domingo, and there to inquire into the conduct of Columbus. This judge, a man in league with his enemies, arrived about the end of August, 1498. The evidence on which he chose to act, he obtained from an examination of persons who had been notoriously implicated in the late rebellion. They asserted that Columbus had ruined the island, and squandered the royal revenues, for the purpose chiefly of enriching himself. As soon as the examination was ended, Bovadilla ordered Columbus and his brother to

be imprisoned on board one of the ships, and immediately sent to Spain.

During the voyage the master of the vessel was desirous of liberating them from their fetters. "No," said the admiral, in a burst of generous indignation, "I wear these irons in consequence of an order from their majesties, the rulers of Spain. They shall find me as obedient to this as to their former injunctions. By their command I have been confined, and their command alone shall release me."

They arrived in the Bay of Cadiz on the twentieth of November, 1498.

*Edmund.*—The conduct of Bovadilla was extremely shameful. It cannot be believed that he acted from a conviction of the criminality of Columbus.

*Frederic.*—Certainly not; for the life of this great navigator, as a subject of the Spanish crown, was that of uniform obedience, and unwearied activity. His whole conduct was such as not merely to obtain for him the esteem, but the enthusiastic admiration of all unprejudiced persons, who had the opportunity and the means of becoming acquainted with it.

*Louisa.*—I am anxious to know what befel Columbus and his brother after their arrival in Spain.

*Edmund.*—They were immediately liberated from their chains, and ordered to appear at court. Here Columbus was enabled, in every particular, to justify his conduct to the satisfaction of their majesties. Ferdinand, cold, distant, and haughty as he was, felt for awhile the emotions of shame. He disclaimed all knowledge of the imprisonment of Columbus, and soothed him with kind words and flattering promises. He treated him with external marks of the most distinguished attention; and declared that the authors of his disgrace should immediately be brought to punishment.

*Mr. Allen.*—Notwithstanding all this apparent favour,

there is reason to suppose that the king was, in a considerable degree, prejudiced against him.

*Sir Charles.*—And the queen, it is said, began to imagine that the commission under which Columbus acted was too extensive, and that his powers and privileges were both too many and too great. The consequence was, that when he expressed a desire of being again sent out, both the king and queen opposed it.

*Frederic.*—They did so, sir; but in a private audience which he afterwards had with the queen, he exhibited to her such sanguine hopes of new discoveries, particularly of finding a passage to the eastern seas, and thence of afterwards being able to subdue the East as well as the West Indies to the power of Spain, that she gave directions for the immediate fitting out of a fleet for this new service.

#### NARRATIVE OF THE LAST VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

ON the ninth of May, 1502, Columbus sailed from Cadiz with four vessels. He passed the islands of Martinique, Santa Cruz, and St. John (since called Porto Rico), and arrived off San Domingo on the twenty-ninth of June. Here he proposed to exchange one of his ships for another better adapted to the service he had in view; but Nicholas de Obando, the new governor of San Domingo, had the presumption to refuse him permission even to enter the harbour. He was, therefore, compelled to proceed on his voyage with the vessels he had brought from Spain. After some days he arrived at the island of Guanaja, in the Bay of Honduras. His brother Bartholomew, who accompanied him, was directed to land with two of the boats. While he was on shore, endeavouring, through the medium of an Indian interpreter, who had been instructed in the Spanish language, to ascertain the nature of the country, a large canoe, laden with commodities of various kinds, arrived from the westward. In exchange for some trifling European articles, Columbus

was permitted to take from this canoe several specimens of Indian ingenuity and industry; particularly sheets and shirts made of cotton, that were curiously wrought, and dyed of various colours; long wooden swords, with the edges formed of a kind of flint; hatchets made of copper, copper bells, plates of copper, and crucibles to melt that metal in. Columbus inquired of this people where gold was to be found; they pointed to the eastward, and he altered his course in that direction.

After having sailed for several days with contrary winds, the navigators at length arrived at a great cape or head-land, which Columbus named Cape Gracias a Dios, or "Cape Thanks to God," because here, the coast bending to the south, the easterly winds, which had hitherto obstructed his progress, were now favourable to him. Passing Veragua, where he was informed there were valuable mines of gold, he proceeded till he came to a large and beautiful harbour, surrounded by a fertile and apparently well cultivated country. To this harbour he gave the name of Porto Bello. The weather was so boisterous that he was obliged to continue here several days; but in the mean time, his ships were well supplied with provisions by the natives.

From Porto Bello Columbus determined to return to Veragua. During his progress, he encountered for three successive days, such tremendous storms as few of his men had ever before witnessed. On the seventeenth of December, he anchored his ships in a small bay, to rest and refresh his crews. The Indians of the adjacent country are described to have had their dwellings in trees, like birds. These were formed by laying poles across the branches, and building on them as a foundation. After Columbus had left this place, the weather again was stormy, and continued so till he arrived at Veragua.

As Veragua was famed for its gold mines, he sent his brother, accompanied by a party of seamen, and some of the Indians as guides, into the interior of the country, in



search of them. In their progress they came to a river, the course of which was so winding, that they had, in different places, to cross it no fewer than forty times. At length, after they had travelled about six leagues, the Indians showed them the places from which the gold was collected. This metal was so abundant that, in the course of two hours, although they had no instruments whatever to dig with, each of the men had gathered a considerable quantity. The design of the journey having been only to obtain information, they returned, on the following day, to the ships.

The harbour of Veragua appeared to Columbus, in various respects, eligible for the establishment of a colony. He therefore proposed to leave here his brother, and most of the men, whilst he returned to obtain reinforcements from Spain. With this intention he gave orders that several houses should be erected; and, amongst others, a large one to serve as a magazine and store-house. Into the latter were put several pieces of cannon, and a considerable quantity of ammunition, together with provisions and other necessaries, for the use and support of the people. The whole town was to be protected by a deep ditch; and one of the ships was to be left.

Ten or twelve of the houses had been erected, and Columbus was preparing for his departure, when the Indian inhabitants, alarmed at the arrangements that were making by the strangers for a permanent residence on their coast, determined, if possible, to destroy the place. No sooner was Columbus on board his vessel, and about to leave the harbour, than a multitude of the inhabitants made an attack upon the town so sudden, and with such terrible effect, that many of the Spaniards were killed, and the remainder were compelled to seek for safety in the ships. The town was burnt, and all further intention of forming a colony there was abandoned.

The ships were now in so leaky and worm-eaten a



state, that Columbus was obliged to destroy one of them ; and, with the other two, he determined immediately to



return to San Domingo. His progress, however, was opposed both by the winds and currents. The sailors did not cease, night or day, from working at the pumps ; notwithstanding which the water rose almost up to the decks ; and the few remaining provisions that were on board were spoiled. After infinite labour the vessels were brought, on the 26th of June, into a small harbour enclosed by rocks on the north coast of Jamaica. Here the sailors being no longer able to keep them afloat, Columbus gave orders that they should be run ashore close together, and propped with strong pieces of timber on each side, to keep them upright. In this situation, being nearly filled with water, sheds were erected on the decks for the men to sleep in, as they did not dare to sleep on shore from fear of surprise by the Indians. The harbour in which Columbus thus sought for shelter, is

to this day known by the name of Don Christopher's Cove.

The Indians who inhabited the adjacent country, were a peaceable and well-disposed people. They brought in their canoes, provisions and refreshments of different kinds, which they gave in exchange for European commodities. The ships were damaged beyond the possibility of repair, and Columbus was now convinced that, without some extraordinary exertion, their miseries and their lives must soon terminate together. He consulted with his officers as to the possibility of escape : and, after much deliberation, it was resolved to send to San Domingo an account of their situation. To effect this, two officers of known courage and fidelity were chosen. The perilous attempt was to be made in two of the large Indian canoes, though the distance betwixt the nearest points of Jamaica and Hispaniola, was little short of a hundred miles. Each of the officers was to be attended by six Spanish sailors, and ten Indians. They were ordered to hasten to San Domingo, and desire that, at the expense of Columbus, if it could not otherwise be obtained, a ship, with provisions and ammunition, should immediately be sent out to his relief. The canoes left Jamaica on the seventh of July.

After their departure Columbus had innumerable dangers to surmount, and many very extraordinary trials for the exercise of his fortitude. Several of the seamen began to suffer from disease, owing to the hardships they had encountered in the voyage, and the subsequent want of wholesome provisions. Columbus himself was ill of the gout, and scarcely able to move out of bed. The men who continued in health began to cabal against him ; forty-eight of them joined in a conspiracy, seized ten canoes, and attempted to escape from the island. After these had departed, the Indians began to desist from bringing provisions to the ships. This caused great distress. Columbus, weakened as he was by the desertion of his men, was obliged to have recourse to a stratagem

to keep these people still in awe of him, and render them obedient to his desires : it was a stratagem which probably nothing but the pressure of actual distress would have induced him to adopt. He knew, from astronomical calculations, that there was about to be an eclipse of the moon. By an Indian who spoke the Spanish language, he gave directions that the chiefs of that part of the island should immediately come to him. When they were assembled, he told them that the Spaniards were Christians, and servants, of God, who rewards the good and punishes the wicked : and that He, having been displeased with the Indians, because they had ceased to supply his distressed servants with provisions, was resolved to chastise them by famine and other dreadful calamities. That they might be convinced of this, he said, they should see a token of his anger in the sky : the moon at her rising that night should appear of a bloody colour. Some of them were alarmed at this prediction, but others made light of it. They, however, were all on watch for the sign ; and the eclipse beginning as soon as the moon was above the horizon, and increasing as she rose, every one was now in dreadful consternation. They hastened to the ships, each man laden with provisions ; and, under a promise of future obedience, besought Columbus to intercede, that the threatened judgments might be averted. On this Columbus shut himself up till the eclipse was at its height ; he then came out, and told them that, as they had thus solemnly promised to supply the Christians with provisions for the future, they had been forgiven. As a token of forgiveness, he said that the moon would gradually assume her usual appearance. The Indians thanked him for his kindness ; the eclipse passed off ; the men went away well pleased ; and, from that time, they regularly supplied the wants of his people.

Many months elapsed after the departure of the two officers for San Domingo ; and yet no relief was sent. Every one imagined that the canoes which carried them out had been lost, and that the crews had perished.

Columbus and his followers began to despair of relief, and to believe themselves fated to terminate their lives in a savage country ; when, at length, about the middle of June, 1504, one of the commanders of the canoes arrived at Jamaica with a ship, which with great difficulty he had at last been able to obtain.

After a continuance, in the whole, of nearly twelve months in Jamaica, Columbus embarked with his men on board this ship. He sailed first for San Domingo, where he was received by the governor with great apparent friendship, lodged in the palace, and treated with many honourable marks of distinction. He then hired another ship for his voyage to Europe, and, after some weeks, arrived in Spain.

When Frederic had concluded his narrative, he remarked, that very few incidents of the remaining life of Columbus had been recorded. He said, that the Queen of Spain, by whom he had been chiefly patronized, had died during his absence.

*Edmund.*—And Columbus severely experienced her loss ; for Ferdinand, though he still treated him with the external appearance of respect, wholly refused to fulfil the engagements which had been made.

*Louisa.*—What could have been the cause of this ?

*Frederic.*—There is reason to suppose that the avarice of the king had led him to expect an immediate supply of gold, to a much greater extent than what had been consigned to him by Columbus : for hitherto the conquests which had been made, had certainly not defrayed the expenses that had been incurred in securing and maintaining them. The mind of the king appears to have been attentive only to the present, and not to have contemplated future advantages to be derived from connexions formed in these distant parts.

*Edmund.*—Whatever may have been the cause, Columbus, as may be supposed, was greatly disappointed at so mortifying a conclusion of his labours.

*Frederic.*—It is evident also that he never forgot the unjust treatment he received from Bovadilla; for, through the whole of his remaining life, as a memorial of the ingratitude of his country, he carried with him, wherever he went, the fetters with which he had been ignominiously loaded. He hung them up in his chamber, and gave directions that they should be buried in his grave.

*Mr. Allen.*—Worn out by years, fatigue, and disappointment, this extraordinary adventurer terminated his mortal career at Valladolid, on the twentieth of May, 1506.

*Edmund.*—His body was conveyed to Seville, and was magnificently interred in the cathedral of that city. On his tomb was engraven an epitaph, recording the most important actions of his life; and particularly his discovery of a new world, as the western parts of the globe were then called.

*Frederic.*—This ought to have been denominated *Columbia*, that the name alone might for ever afterwards have excited the remembrance of the hero, who, in defiance of every obstacle, had succeeded in realizing a project that had previously been esteemed, by his contemporaries, little better than the chimera of a disturbed imagination.

*Lady Irwin.*—Is there extant any description of the person of Columbus?

*Frederic.*—Yes; he is described to have been tall of stature, to have had a long visage, a majestic aspect, an aqualine nose, and clear and ruddy complexion.

*Louisa.*—What was his private character?

*Frederic.*—He was a man of captivating manners; affable to strangers, and kind and affectionate to his family and friends. In public his presence excited respect, from the air of authority and self command with which he always acted. His regard for religion, according to the faith that he professed, was strict and sincere; and he is said to have exhibited a much more earnest desire for the conversion of the Indians to Christianity than any of his immediate successors.

Here the account of the life and Voyages of Columbus was terminated ; and Edmund said, that on the ensuing evening, it was his intention to speak of those of Americus Vespucius.

---

### THIRD EVENING.

“ Now, Louisa,” said Edmund, “ you shall know what real claim AMERICUS VESPUCIUS had to give name to the great western continent. I think we can show you that the priority of the discovery of America was with Columbus.”

*Sir Charles.*—But, Edmund, first tell us who Americus Vespucius was. Let us have his family history, before you relate to us his adventures.

*Edmund.*—He was a native of Florence, the descendant of an illustrious family, and born in the year 1451.

*Sir Charles.*—If this was the case, how became he a mariner ? for it appears he went to sea in a very subordinate capacity.

*Frederic.*—He received the same kind of education, sir, as those Florentine nobility who were destined for commercial pursuits. We shall presently see the particular cause of his having become a seaman.

*Louisa.*—What was his education, Frederic ?

*Frederic.*—He was instructed in natural philosophy, astronomy, geography, and every other science connected with navigation ; and he is said to have attained peculiar skill in the art of laying down and drawing maps. He was sent to Spain to be initiated in mercantile affairs.

*Mr. Allen.*—This accounts for his connexion with those eminent persons in Spain, under whose protection he was sent to sea.

*Frederic.*—It was not till after the return of Columbus from this second voyage, when the brilliancy of *his*



discoveries had excited, in the minds of the whole Spanish people, an ardent desire of exploring distant regions, that the ambition of Americus was thereby turned into this particular channel. He now determined to give up the pursuit of trade that he might visit that new world, the existence of which had already been declared.

*Louisa.*—But as yet Columbus had made no discoveries on the continent of America. He had indeed heard of it, but hitherto had seen only islands.

*Frederic.*—True ; but in his third voyage, his discovery of that continent proved anterior to the discovery by Americus. It is, indeed, asserted that the latter originally sailed from Cadiz in May, 1497 ; but the Spanish writers have proved that the dates of all his voyages are fictitious ; and that his first voyage did not commence till the year 1499.

*Louisa.*—You speak of his first voyage : how many voyages did he make ?

*Frederic.*—Four, according to the papers which have been published since his death ; but there seems good reason for imagining that what he has denominated the first two voyages were, in reality, the same ; and that he thus divided them, for the purpose of giving better colour to his pretended priority of discovery.

*Lady Irwin.*—But we are yet ignorant, Frederic, respecting the first engagement of Americus in these voyages : will you relate to us the particulars of it ?

*Frederic.*—The Bishop of Burgos, envious of the fame of Columbus, and the favour that he enjoyed at the Spanish court, persuaded several wealthy inhabitants of Seville to join in fitting out a small squadron for the purpose of completing those discoveries which he had commenced, and particularly to search for that continent, the existence of which he had already ascertained. Alonzo de Hojeda, who had formerly served under Columbus, obtained the chief command of this squadron, and Americus was appointed the pilot.

*Louisa.*—But how was Americus able to impose upon mankind to such an extent as to induce them to name that country after himself, if he did not discover it?

*Frederic.*—He would not have been enabled to effect this, had it not happened that, after the death of Columbus, he was appointed to a situation in the Spanish navy, which, for several years, gave him the entire control of maritime affairs, as far as they related to discoveries in the new world.

*Edmund.*—Notwithstanding this, his captain, Hojeda, proved on oath that some of his most important assertions, with respect to dates, were false. I have drawn up a narrative of his first and most important voyage from the relation which he has himself given of it.

#### NARRATIVE OF A VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY BY AMERICUS VESPUCIUS.

THE squadron, consisting of four ships, of which Alonzo de Hojeda had the chief command, and Americus was the pilot, sailed, according to his assertion, from the harbour of Cadiz, in the month of May, 1497; but (as Frederic has observed) there is reason to believe that this date ought to have been 1499. Passing the *Canary Islands*, they proceeded, with a fair wind, in a south-westerly direction, for twenty-seven days, when they arrived at a country, which they believed to be a continent, and which it is probable was the province of *Paria*, part of what is now called the *Spanish Main*. The fleet was brought to anchor about five miles from the coast; and several men well armed were sent on shore in the boats. Great numbers of the natives assembled on the beach to gaze upon the strangers; but, alarmed at their approach, they fled to a hill in the neighbourhood, from which it was impossible to allure them.

Finding it in vain to attempt any intercourse here,

Hojeda proceeded with his vessels along the coast. In two days a convenient bay and place for anchorage were found. The Indians of the adjacent shore were at first alarmed; but, overcoming their fears, they, after a while, approached the Spaniards, and received from them small mirrors, glass beads, and other toys; and many threw themselves into the sea, and swam to the ships. They were naked, of a dark copper colour, and though of small stature, they were, in general, well-proportioned. Their arms were clubs, spears, bows and arrows. The huts in which they dwelt were formed somewhat in the shape of bells, of timber covered with the leaves of palm-trees.

As nothing of importance was here discovered, the navigators continued their voyage still keeping as near

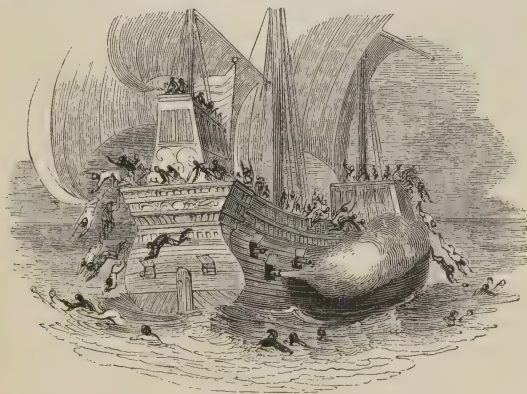


the shore as possible. After some days they entered a harbour, where they observed a town built in the water. It consisted of about twenty large bell-shaped huts, on

solid wooden foundations, and connected together by draw-bridges. As soon as the inhabitants saw the ships they drew up the bridges, and retreated into their dwellings. Afterwards twelve canoes, each hollowed out of the trunk of a large tree, advanced towards the ships. The people in the canoes resisted every attempt to establish a friendly intercourse. The ships' boats were manned and rowed towards them, but on the approach of these, they all hastened to the land. At last they were induced apparently to lay aside their suspicions, and great numbers of other canoes came round the vessels. Suddenly, however, on a violent outcry, they commenced an attack upon the Spaniards with arrows and spears. This was repelled, and about twenty of the Indians were killed in the affray.

Leaving the harbour on the following morning, the Spaniards sailed eighty leagues further along the coast, when they found another tribe of Indians wholly different from the last. The vessels were anchored; and the sailors, on landing, saw a crowd, as they imagined, of nearly four thousand people, who at their approach, all immediately fled into the woods. The sailors then entered the huts of these Indians, and there saw abundance of victuals boiling, and various kinds of wild animals and fishes roasting. Among others Americus describes one of appearance so hideous that none of the men dared even to touch it lest they should be poisoned. It was a yard and a half in length; and had four feet, each armed with strong claws; but in other respects it had the appearance of a serpent, with a ridge of spines along the middle of its back. This creature was the guana, a large animal of the lizard tribe, which is a favourite food for the inhabitants of many parts of America at this day. The people who had fled into the woods did not return, and the Spaniards, wishing, if possible, to conciliate them, resolved not to take away any of their effects, but, after having hung up many trifling European articles in the huts, they returned to their

ships. This plan succeeded. On the following morning the natives gradually became familiar ; and, having informed the Spaniards, by signs, that they did not dwell in that place, but that they merely resorted thither for the purpose of fishing, they induced Americus and about twenty others to accompany them on a journey of about three leagues inland, to their village. Here they entertained them with many barbarous ceremonies of dances and songs, accompanied with plentiful entertainment. Americus and his friends continued among them nine days, during which they visited a great number of other villages, and were every where treated with kindness and respect. So many of these people accompanied them on their return to the ships, that it was supposed more than a thousand were on board at one time. They admired the prodigious size of the vessels, in comparison with that of their own canoes, and were astonished at every part of the rigging, tackle, and furniture.



A ludicrous scene took place on this occasion. One of the cannon was fired, and instantly, like so many frogs, they all rushed headlong into the water, and swam to the shore.



The Spaniards shortly afterwards left this part of the coast, and having proceeded several hundred leagues further, they began to find it requisite to refit the ships. They had been absent from Europe thirteen months, and had also nearly expended their stores and provisions. Having found a commodious harbour, they unladed the vessels, hauled them upon the beach, and repaired them effectually. The inhabitants of the adjacent country rendered important assistance; and, when the Spaniards were about to depart, they informed them that they were frequently invaded by the people of an island which they described. The Spaniards voluntarily undertook to avenge their injuries. Accompanied by a party of Indians as guides, they sailed, with this intention, in a somewhat north-easterly direction; and, after a few days, arrived at a cluster of islands, near one of which, as directed by their Indian friends, they anchored the ships. This island Americus calls *Ity*; and, from the resemblance of this word to *Hayti*, their place of landing is supposed to have been on the western coast of *Hispaniola*. The inhabitants approached the shore and discharged some arrows at the Spaniards, on which the cannon were fired, and great numbers of them were killed. A battle ensued, in which many others were killed and wounded, and one of the Indian towns was burnt to the ground.

After this sanguinary and apparently unjustifiable procedure, the squadron returned to Spain, carrying more than two hundred Indians, whom Hojeda and his associates had taken during their voyage, and all of whom they had afterwards the cruelty to sell as slaves. The vessels are stated to have arrived at Cadiz, on the 15th of October, 1498.

When Edmund had concluded his narrative, he remarked, that the information which was conveyed in the account of the preceding voyage, was by no means satisfactory. The places were not, he said, sufficiently



described, and few names, either Indian or Spanish, were given. Frederic thought, that some allowance ought to be made on account of this having been one of the earliest voyages of discovery that had been effected. Yet, replied Edmund, as Americus had, with so much eagerness, called the newly-discovered continent after himself, we cannot but be surprised at his not having given names to the various places which he visited. He said, he did not believe, as some writers have asserted, that the whole narrative is a fiction; but he could not help remarking that the want of names was at least a suspicious circumstance.

*Louisa*.—What account have you to give of the *Second Voyage of Americus*?

*Edmund*.—The narrative of this voyage, which Americus has told us was commenced from Cadiz, in the month of May, 1499, is a very uninteresting one, and appears to contain several marks of invention. He speaks, among other things, of an island, which he calls the Island of Giants, from the inhabitants having been people of enormous stature; and says that, northward of Hispaniola, nearly a thousand different islands were discovered, which it had been the intention of Hojeda to examine, but that the complaints of his crew had prevented this, by compelling him to return to Europe.

*Frederic*.—Yet Americus gave such an account of his successes, and brought home so many productions of the new world, that he was received both by the king and queen of Spain in the most flattering manner.

*Lady Irwin*.—If he were so well received in Spain, how happened it that, not long afterwards he entered the service of Portugal? for he certainly performed at least one voyage from that country.

*Edmund*.—He was seduced, by very advantageous offers from Emanuel, the king of Portugal, to accompany a Portuguese squadron of three ships, that had been fitted out for discoveries. With these ships he sailed from Lisbon, on the tenth of May, 1501.

*Louisa*.—And is the *narrative of the Third Voyage of Americus* an interesting one?

*Frederic*.—It is scarcely more so than the last. The fleet, after passing the *Canaries*, approached the coast of *Africa*, and then, crossing the ocean, coasted almost the whole of *Brazil* to *Patagonia*. But a succession of tempestuous weather forced it to return to Portugal, where two of the ships arrived on the seventh of December, 1502. The third having been found incapable of proceeding further, was burnt at *Sierra Leone*, on the coast of *Africa*.

*Edmund*.—The places at which Americus touched, are, in this voyage, described in such vague terms, that it is extremely difficult, in many instances, to ascertain from his account, what are their present names; and his marks of latitude also are often grossly erroneous.

*Sir Charles*.—The King of Portugal, however, invited him to make a *Fourth Voyage*. If my recollection does not fail me, he now undertook the office of pilot to a fleet of six ships, commanded by one of the Portuguese admirals; and sailed from Lisbon, on the tenth of May, 1505.

*Louisa*.—What was the particular object of this voyage?

*Edmund*.—Similar to that of Columbus; it was to discover a passage westward, to the eastern seas; and particularly to the *Molucca Islands*. But this voyage was less successful than any of the preceding. During a tremendous storm the ship in which Americus sailed struck upon a rock, and there was only time for the crew to escape in the boats before she sunk. The admiral's ship was also sunk; and the remaining vessels, after having encountered other imminent dangers, were glad to return in safety to Europe.

Thus ended the two Portuguese voyages of Americus.

*Lady Irwin*.—Frederic has said, that after the death of Columbus, this Florentine navigator was appointed to a

high station in the Spanish navy. I had imagined that he died in the service of Portugal.

*Mr. Allen.*—So he did, madam. I will explain to you the circumstance. Americus remained in Portugal until the death of Columbus. The Spanish court, wishing to repair the loss occasioned by that event, recalled Americus into their service. He sailed in 1507, in a Spanish fleet, with the title of first pilot; and it was during this voyage that the new world took its name from him. Americus lived a considerable time afterwards; and, previously to his death, returned into the service of Portugal.

*Frederic.*—He died in the year 1516; and the king, in honour of his memory, caused the remains of his ship to be deposited in the cathedral of Lisbon. Americus left a journal of his first four voyages. This was first published in Latin, and afterwards in Italian and French.

*Louisa.*—I am much indebted to Frederic Montagu and my brother, for having corrected me in an important error respecting Americus Vesputius, and the first discovery of the new continent. It is an error to which I have long been subject, and which I originally contracted from one of my early books of geography.



## FOURTH EVENING.

EDMUND IRWIN asked his sister if she knew what vessel it was that first sailed round the world? "Columbus," he observed, "would, probably, have been the earliest of the circumnavigators had not the western continent intervened, and stopped his progress; for he appears to have been the first who imagined such a scheme to be practicable."

*Louisa.*—I have always supposed that the honour of this exploit was due to our own countryman, Sir Francis Drake.

*Edmund.*—You are so far in error, Louisa, as to have mistaken the second circumnavigation for the first. The vessel that first sailed round the world, was one of those belonging to an expedition from Spain, commanded by the Portuguese navigator, FERDINAND DE MAGALHAENS, or MAGELLAN, as he is more commonly called by us.

*Louisa.*—Was this the same person who gave appellation to the Straits of Magellan?

*Edmund.*—It was. His voyage was forty-eight years earlier than that of Drake.

*Louisa.*—You speak of one of his vessels only. Do you mean it to be inferred that Magalhaens himself did not accomplish the whole voyage?

*Edmund.*—In consequence of an act of great imprudence, as I shall soon inform you more particularly, he was slain by the inhabitants of an island in the eastern seas.

*Frederic.*—Magalhaens appears to have had great severity of disposition, and an impetuosity of temper not well adapted for conciliation.

*Mr. Allen.*—Stay, Frederic: you are giving an account of the character of this navigator without first stating any of the circumstances of his life. When was he born? who was he? and what were the pursuits of his early years? These must not be omitted.

*Frederic.*—He was, by birth, a native of Portugal, descended of a good family, and born towards the end of the fifteenth century. He addicted himself from his youth, to maritime affairs, and acquired great skill both in the theory and practice of navigation.

*Lady Irwin.*—What were the first services in which he was engaged?

*Frederic.*—In the early part of his life he was employed, for upwards of five years, in the East Indies, as

an officer in the squadron, commanded by the Portuguese Admiral Alfonzo d'Albuquerque.

*Sir Charles.*—This person was the founder of the immense power which the government of Portugal afterwards possessed in India.

*Frederic.*—For the services which Magalhaens had performed in the east, he considered himself entitled to some recompense. He applied for this to the Portuguese government, but all his applications were treated with neglect.

*Edmund.*—In consequence of which, in company with one of his associates, Ruy Falero, an eminent Portuguese astronomer, he left his own country to seek for better encouragement in a foreign land. He went to Spain, and solicited employment from Charles V. then reigning in that country. He proposed to this monarch to attempt certain discoveries in distant seas.

*Louisa.*—And did he obtain the employment he sought for?

*Frederic.*—After a little while he did. But the Portuguese ambassador used every imaginable stratagem to prevent it. Among others he solicited the court to give up Magalhaens, and his companion, as deserters from the service of Portugal. Finding this of no avail, he represented Magalhaens to be a vain and talkative person, ready to undertake even the most desperate enterprises, yet wanting both capacity and courage for the execution of them.

*Louisa.*—The Spanish court, I hope, had too much good sense to be deceived by representations, which were evidently made from interested motives.

*Frederic.*—All the arts of the ambassador were unavailing. The king of Spain, satisfied of the probability of the discoveries that were proposed by Magalhaens, received both himself and his companion into favour, elevated them to the rank of knighthood, and engaged to furnish them with five ships, manned by two hundred and thirty-six men; and supplied with provisions, ammunition, and stores for two years.

*Lady Irwin.*—What was the object of this voyage?

*Edmund.*—To endeavour to find a passage westward into the South Sea; and thence to the East Indies.

NARRATIVE OF THE FIRST VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

MAGALHAENS sailed from Seville, with his five ships, in the month of August, 1519. Early in October he passed the *Cape de Verd* islands. After having been detained by tedious calms on the coast of *Guinea* for seventy days, he crossed the equator, and proceeded on his course towards *Brazil*, where he arrived in the beginning of December. Some days subsequently to this, he anchored his squadron at the mouth of a large river, supposed to have been the same that is now called the *Rio Janeiro*.

The inhabitants of the adjacent country, an olive-coloured and well formed race of people, flocked to the beach, in great numbers, to see what they imagined to be five immense sea-monsters approaching their shore. And when they beheld the boats put out from the ships, they set up a great shout, supposing them to have been young sea-monsters, the offspring of the others.

Some of the Spaniards went towards the shore in the boats; on which the Indians, now undeceived, were induced to go off to the ships in their canoes, carrying with them provisions and refreshments of various kinds. These were in such abundance, that for a knave out of a pack of cards, one of them gave, in exchange, six fowls, and imagined he had made a good bargain.

After the Spaniards had continued here about a fortnight, they proceeded, in a southerly direction, along the American coast, until they arrived at the immense river, which has since been called *La Plata*. Magalhaens was delighted at the discovery of what he hoped might prove the outlet of a channel into the western sea. He immediately directed the vessels to ascend the stream; but,



after an examination of several days, he found himself deceived, and was compelled to return.

Proceeding still southward, he arrived, in the month of April, 1520, at a large bay, which is now called the Bay of St. Julian. Here, as the winter was approaching, for it is winter in the southern hemisphere, during our summer, Magalhaens determined to continue for some months until the return of spring should the better enable him to proceed on his voyage.

Much discontent prevailed when the crews of the several vessels understood this to be his resolution. They were apprehensive they should have to endure great hardships in so inhospitable a climate. Magalhaens was told, that "the King of Spain did not expect them to accomplish impossibilities; that they had already proceeded further than any European vessel had before ventured; and that, if they approached still nearer to the pole, the whole fleet might perish." They therefore proposed that the ships should immediately return to Europe. Magalhaens answered that "his determination was to perform if possible all he had undertaken: that the king had ordered the voyage, and that he was resolved to advance, until they came either to a termination of the land, or to some passage into the western sea." The consequence of this was a mutiny, which was not quelled until after the loss of some lives.

Five dreary months were passed in the harbour of St. Julian, during which every possible preparation was made for the successful prosecution of the voyage. For a long time the adjacent country was thought to be uninhabited; but, after some weeks, the Spaniards were surprised by the appearance, on the shore, of an Indian of gigantic stature. He was nearly naked: a brisk and merry fellow; and approached that part of the beach which was opposite to the ships, singing and dancing. For some time he stood there, throwing sand upon his head. This being observed, a party of seamen went to him in a boat, and induced him to accompany them on board their ship,

which he did, without any appearance of fear or hesitation. On being taken to Magalhaens, he pointed to the sky, as if to inquire whether the Spaniards had descended from thence. He was shown his own figure in a looking-glass, and was so much astonished at the sight, as, on starting back, to overturn four Spaniards who were behind him. More of the natives afterwards approached



the shore. They were all much larger and taller than Europeans, had their bodies painted with various figures, carried bows and arrows, and were clad in garments made of the skins of beasts. They also wore a kind of shoes formed of skins. These caused their feet to appear like those of an animal; whence Magalhaens named them *Pata-gones*, from the Spanish word *pata*, signifying a hoof or paw. To these people Magalhaens was guilty of a treacherous breach of hospitality. Wishing to convey two of them to Spain, as objects of curiosity, he practised a most unworthy stratagem to prevent them from availing themselves of their superior strength. Under the sem-

blance of friendship, he presented them with knives, beads, and toys, in such numbers as completely to fill their hands. Some bright iron rings and shackles were then shown them. These they were also desirous of possessing; and, as their hands were filled, Magalhaens proposed to put them on their legs. They unsuspectingly assented, imagining that they were fine ornaments like the rest, and seemed pleased with their jingling sound, until they found themselves fettered and betrayed. They then struggled, but in vain, to liberate themselves, and bellowed in a loud and most frightful manner.

After so despicable an act of treachery, we cannot be surprised to read that the other Indians should have seized the first opportunity for revenging the loss of their companions. A party of them shortly afterwards attacked some of the Spaniards on shore, and killed one of them. Magalhaens had the ferocity to send twenty men, with orders to pursue the Indians in all directions, and to take or kill every one whom they should find. After a search for eight days, these men returned to the ships without accomplishing the wishes of their master; the Indians having retired into the interior of their country.

The Spaniards continued in Port St. Julian until the month of August, when they proceeded on their passage southward till they arrived at a cape, whence the coast turned directly towards the west. They now consequently sailed westward, and soon found themselves in an arm of the sea which, from various circumstances, Magalhaens was induced to believe connected the two oceans. He directed the vessels to proceed along it, and, in different parts, the land on each side presented many beautiful and picturesque scenes. When they had advanced about fifty leagues from the entrance, they found themselves between mountains covered with snow; but the lower lands, near the shore, were clad with trees and verdure. In about six weeks from their entering this passage, they were again in an open sea, the coast terminating westward in a cape, and the shore of the American

continent taking a northerly direction. The sight of the Great South Sea gave Magalhaens the most unbounded joy. He had thus discovered that of which he had been in quest, and was now enabled practically to demonstrate, what he had advanced, that it was possible to sail to the East Indies by the way of the west. He entered the South Sea (the first European who had ever sailed upon it), on the twenty-eighth of November, 1520. The passage thus discovered is that which in our maps of South America, is laid down as the Strait of Magellan.

Magalhaens, whilst at Port St. Julian, had lost one of his vessels by shipwreck ; and in his passage through the strait, another of them forsook him, and returned to Europe. The three that were left, as soon as they were clear of the land, he directed to be steered in a northerly course, that they might the more speedily escape from the cold and tempestuous climate of the south pole.

In crossing the ocean now before them, the crews of all the ships experienced the utmost distress from want of food. All the provisions having been consumed, to save themselves from absolute starvation, they were compelled, for some time, to subsist on dry skins, and upon leather cut from the rigging of the ships, which they steeped for some days in salt water, to render it soft enough to be chewed. What water remained in the ships was become putrid, and so nauseous that nothing but absolute necessity could have compelled them to use it. Owing to these impure and scanty means of subsistence, their numbers daily diminished, and those who remained alive, became weak, low-spirited, and sickly. Some, who were unable to chew the tough leathern viands, which formed their only food, were starved to death. Their only comfort, under this dreadful state of famine was, that the winds blew them steadily and gently along, while the ocean remained calm and unruffled. Hence it received the name of Pacific Ocean, which it has since retained.

The vessels passed two uninhabited islands, which

afforded no relief; but at length, on the sixth of March, 1521, Magalhaens and his companions were delighted, beyond expression, by arriving at a cluster of apparently luxuriant and fertile islands. These, they soon found, were inhabited; and, as the ships approached the shore, the natives of the islands came off to them in canoes, bringing with them cocoa-nuts, yams, and rice. They were in general a stout well-made people, of a dark olive colour; they had long hair, and their teeth were dyed red and black by way of ornament. This people wore no other covering than a kind of apron fastened round their waist; and they were armed with clubs and spears, pointed with the bones of fish.

Magalhaens was desirous of continuing at these islands some time, for the purpose of resting and refreshing his men; but the inhabitants were so addicted to thieving, that he soon became involved in quarrels with them. Flocking on board the ships in immense numbers, they endeavoured to carry off whatever was within their reach; and they even seized one of the boats. The consequence was, that Magalhaens landed with ninety of his men, set fire to their houses, killed a great number of the inhabitants, and then thought it prudent to leave the neighbourhood, and proceed on his voyage. Hence he named these islands the *Ladrones Islands*, or the "*Islands of Thieves*."

His men, however, were not yet recovered from the effect of their late sufferings. He consequently afterwards landed them on an island, not inhabited, where they found springs of excellent water, with abundance of fruit-trees and vegetables; some gold, and a great quantity of white coral. The natives of some of the adjacent islands, a people of much humanity, and of friendly disposition, came to them laden with presents of fish, and with wine made from the juice of the cocoa-nut tree. They afterwards brought to them a variety of other provisions, and entered into much familiar intercourse with them. These Indians had, in

their canoes, several kinds of spices, such as cinnamon, cloves, nutmegs, ginger, and mace, and many ornaments made of gold, which they were accustomed to sell as merchandise. Their only clothing was a kind of apron, made from the inner bark of some species of tree. They wore gold ear-rings and jewels rudely set in gold upon their arms.

The Spaniards continued at this island somewhat more than ten days, during which time they not only recovered in a great degree from the effects of their late sufferings, but were enabled to lay in a considerable store of provisions, wood, and water, for the supply of the ships.

About a week after they left it, they landed on another island, which Magalhaens calls Buthuan, but which is not marked in the modern maps. Two of his officers went on shore, and were introduced to the king of the island in his palace; a building like a great hay-loft, thatched with palm leaves, and mounted so high upon posts of timber, that they had to ascend to it by ladders. If the account that has been given be correct, all the vessels that were used at table, in this palace, were made of gold; and the king gave to the officers a great quantity both of gold and spices to take to the ships.

The Spaniards subsequently landed at several other islands, where they found abundance of fruit, vegetables, and other provisions. In one of these they saw a great number of bats, which are described to have been as large as eagles, and which, when properly dressed, were excellent food.

At the estimated distance of about three hundred leagues from the Ladrões, they passed several other islands, the inhabitants of which appeared to be humane and generous. They next discovered the Philippine Islands. Here they were so well treated, that they continued in the neighbourhood of one of them, called Zebu, for several weeks. In return for this treatment, Magalhaens had the presumption to demand that the



chiefs of all the islands with which he had held any intercourse should acknowledge themselves vassals of the crown of Spain, threatening the punishment of death, and the confiscation of their possessions, to all who should refuse this obedience. The king of Zebu submitted; but the chiefs of some of the adjacent islands ridiculed and despised both the command and the threat. One of these, the king of Matan, returned for answer; "That he desired to be on good terms with the Spaniards; and, that he might not be accounted inhospitable, he sent them a present of provisions. As to obedience, he could owe none to strangers of whom he had never before heard." Magalhaens rashly and cruelly declared, that he would punish this chief for what he called so daring an act of insolence. He proceeded to Matan, accompanied by sixty Europeans, in three boats; and attended by the king of Zebu, with a great number of his subjects, in canoes. Confident in the superior courage, discipline, and weapons of his men beyond those of his opponents, Magalhaens insisted that the king of Zebu should afford him no assistance. He landed, and, having marched to some distance into the interior of the island, his forces were attacked by three distinct bodies of Indians. One of these assailed him on each flank and the third in front. Their united strength was estimated at more than three thousand men. The Spaniards were unable long to oppose so overwhelming a force; but were compelled, in the utmost disorder, to retreat towards their boats. Previously to this, Magalhaens had been wounded in the leg by an arrow. His helmet was beaten off his head with stones. His right arm being wounded, he could not use his sword; and, being closely beset by surrounding multitudes, he was brought to the ground, and stabbed through the body with a spear. This fatal event occurred on the twenty-seventh of April, 1521, about nineteen months after the commencement of his expedition.



The Spaniards ineffectually endeavoured to redeem the body of their commander; and the king of Zebu, having now made peace with his rival, the king of Matan, engaged, as one of the conditions of it, to put all the remaining Spaniards to death. With this design he invited the officers to a banquet. Twenty-eight accepted the invitation; and the greater number of them were assassinated during the repast. The outcries of the miserable victims were heard at the ships; and, soon afterwards, the Indians were seen dragging the dead bodies to the water-side, and flinging them into the sea.

New commanders were chosen from among the surviving officers. One of the vessels, which they had not now hands sufficient to manage, was burnt; and its men, ammunition, and provisions transferred into the other two.

It had been one of the principal objects of this expedition to reach the Molucca Islands by a westerly passage from Europe. Previously to his death, Magal-

haens had ascertained that these were not far distant from the Philippines. His surviving companions consequently proceeded in search of them. After some days they reached the large and rich island of Borneo. The king of this island, who was a Mahometan, and a man of great power, sent two elephants, in rich trappings, to bring the Spanish messengers to his palace ; and afterwards dismissed them with valuable presents.

At the distance of several days sail from Borneo, they came to an island situated in 8 degrees 7 minutes of north latitude. Here all the men landed, with their ammunition and stores ; and about forty days were occupied in repairing and refitting the ships. They next approached a cluster of five islands, which they were informed were the Moluccas ; and came to anchor in the port of one of them called Tidore. Their reception at this island was such, that they were permitted to use the houses of the inhabitants with as much freedom as they would have done their own. On the twelfth of November they opened a kind of warehouse for the sale and exchange of such European merchandise as they still had left. By so doing they were enabled to purchase a large stock of cloves and other spices ; and also to obtain for the ships an abundant supply of provisions.

From Tidore they passed to some of the other islands in the eastern seas ; and thence, by the Cape of Good Hope, to Europe. During this part of the voyage the crews of both the ships suffered dreadfully both from famine and sickness. One of them was afterwards taken by the Portuguese ; and the other, with only about eighteen Europeans on board, arrived in Spain, on the seventh of September, 1522, after an absence, in the whole, of three years and twenty-seven days.

On their arrival in Spain, a circumstance was discovered which has since been explained, that the voyagers had lost a day in their reckoning, owing to the course they had sailed ; whereas had they sailed in a contrary direction, from east to west, they would have gained a

day. In passing round the world in the same course with the sun, that luminary had risen once less often to them than it had done to those who had remained stationary.

*Louisa.*—Who, Edmund, was the commander of this vessel at its return? I hope he was well rewarded for his services.

*Edmund.*—His name was Juan Sebastian del Cano. A patent of nobility was granted to him, and an annual pension of five hundred ducats for his life. Liberal rewards were also bestowed on all his companions.

*Mr. Allen.*—By the success of this voyage, the skill and penetration of Columbus, who had first asserted the possibility of its performance, were fully established.

*Frederic.*—Had Magalhaens acted with prudence he would have had the honour of being accounted the first circumnavigator of the globe.

*Sir Charles.*—Though he did not encompass the globe; yet having, previously to this voyage, served some years in the East Indies, he very nearly made the circuit.

*Mr. Allen.*—Magalhaens fell by a quarrel unnecessarily engaged in, for a course which cannot be defended, and in the prosecution of which he consulted his presumption rather than his judgment. Still he was entitled to the appellation of a “great captain,” which has been given to him by the Spanish writers. In resolution and decision few men of any age have equalled him. Inflexible perseverance seems to have been a strong and peculiar feature in his character. His mind was incessantly bent on the performance of whatever he undertook; and no common circumstances of discouragement or danger could divert him from his purpose.

*Sir Charles.*—As a discoverer of unknown countries I think Magalhaens ought to be estimated next in rank to Columbus. The advantages that have been obtained to geography by his voyage, are very

important. He ascertained the limits of the continent of America towards the south, and the communication of the Atlantic with the South Sea. His other discoveries were several islands in the Eastern Seas, particularly the Ladrones, and what have since been called the Philippine Islands.

*Edmund.*—He visited many islands which, before his time, were wholly unknown to Europe, and he named a great number of them; but unfortunately few of his names are to be found either in modern books or maps; and indeed many parts of his voyage are so loosely and unsatisfactorily related, that it is often difficult to trace his course.

*Lady Irwin.*—As Magalhaens died on the voyage, by whom was the account of it written?

*Edmund.*—By Antonio Pigafetta, who was one of the officers that accompanied him; and who was one of the few that returned in safety to their native country.



## FOURTH EVENING.

THE discovery of America, said Mr. Allen, opened to Spanish ambition, and to the avarice of various individual adventurers of that nation, an irresistible prospect of grandeur and of wealth. The existence in that country, of mines of the precious metals was alone an inducement with many persons to contemplate a conquest, which, though it would be attended with difficulty, was at least possible. But there was another stimulus. The inhabitants of the new world, ignorant of the gospel dispensation, were of course Pagans. Many persons were, consequently, induced anxiously to hope for their conversion to Christianity. The Spanish government obtained from the pope an especial dispensation for this

purpose. The pope, having assumed a power over all Christian churches, pretended even to give to the Spaniards a preeminent right, above all other nations, to the absolute possession of such Pagan countries in the new world as they could conquer and convert to Christianity. The cross was now erected as a standard for conquest; and, under this great emblem of peace on earth, were commenced numerous expeditions, the real objects of which seemed only to be cruelty and plunder. One of the leaders of these expeditions, was FERDINANDO CORTES, a native of Estremadura, in Spain, of whose conquest of Mexico, Frederic, I know, has prepared a narrative which he proposes to read this evening. Cortes was born in 1485, about seven years before Columbus sailed from Spain on his first voyage. I leave to Frederic to inform you who he was, and how he was educated.

*Frederic.*—He was descended from a family of high rank, but small fortune. His parents intended him for the profession of the law, and he studied for a while in the university of Salamanca; but his dissipated habits and overbearing temper, caused him to be disliked by all. The restraint to which it was necessary he should submit in the university, soon became irksome to him; and the celebrity that had attended the voyages of discovery by Columbus excited Cortes to become an adventurer.

*Louisa.*—I suppose he imagined he could prove himself a second Columbus. Was he permitted to go to sea when young?

*Frederic.*—Yes; his father, seeing that nothing better could be done, was glad to comply with his inclination.

*Lady Irwin.*—Possibly in the hope of ridding himself of him for ever. He is not the only father who has sent a dissipated son to sea, because he did not know what to do with him at home. But whither was Cortes sent?



*Frederic.*—To one of his kinsmen, Don Nicholas de Obando, who, in 1502, had been appointed governor of St. Domingo.

*Edmund.*—It was intended that Cortes should have gone out with Obando from Spain; but he was prevented from this by an unlucky accident.

*Louisa.*—What accident, Edmund?

*Edmund.*—In attempting to scale a lady's window, he threw down an old wall, and was so much bruised as to be unable to perform the voyage.

*Louisa.*—Ha, ha, ha! I do not much pity the poor man. I think he deserved his fate as a punishment for his rudeness.

*Frederic.*—He did not reach St. Domingo until about two years after the arrival there of his kinsman. But when he went, Obando received him with every indication of cordiality and friendship. Cortes acquitted himself with so much intrepidity in several military exploits in the West Indies, that he was appointed, by Diego Velasquez, governor of Cuba, to the post of captain general of an army which was destined for new conquests.

*Lady Irwin.*—The expedition, thus fitted out, was intended as little more than an enterprise for the acquisition of plunder. It was not a voyage of discovery.

*Frederic.*—It certainly was not: and a history of conquests may not appear immediately conformable to a plan which professes to embrace only a narrative of discoveries. It is, however, so intimately connected with such a plan, that at every step of the present conqueror, we find a discovery of kingdoms, provinces, and people, which before were utterly unknown.

*Edmund.*—This observation will also apply to the adventures of Pizarro, a narrative of which I have prepared for to-morrow.

*Sir Charles.*—It will likewise apply to the narrative of others of the early voyagers; many of whom had few

objects in view besides enriching themselves by the plunder of their enemies. I allude to Drake, Dampier, Rogers, and others. To what country was Cortes sent?

*Frederic.*—To the rich and populous kingdom of Mexico.

*Mr. Allen.*—But the suspicious temper of Velasquez induced him to retract this appointment. From the well-known character of Cortes, he began to fear that this officer, after having conquered the country, might be induced to declare himself independent of the governor of Cuba.

*Frederic.*—Velasquez, in fact, knew not whom to trust. He expressed his intention of depriving him of the command; and this intention was secretly conveyed to Cortes, who consequently hastened his departure with the utmost expedition.

#### NARRATIVE OF THE CONQUEST OF MEXICO.

CORTES sailed from St. Jago first to Trinidad, a seaport of Cuba; and afterwards to the Havanna, where he engaged additional adventurers, and provided the necessary equipment for his small armament. To each of these places Velasquez sent orders that the expedition should not proceed, and that Cortes himself should be returned a prisoner to St. Jago. Not discouraged by the embarrassment of his situation, Cortes assembled his comrades: he explained to them the jealous suspicions of Velasquez, and told them that it was the determination of this man, if possible, to deprive them all of the rich spoil they had in prospect. They received the intelligence with indignation; and offered to shed their blood in maintaining the authority of their commander. The consequence was, that Cortes immediately resolved to assert his independence, to renounce all allegiance to Velasquez, and to prosecute the voyage in defiance of him.

His fleet consisted of eleven vessels; and the number

of men who accompanied him was six hundred and seventeen. These were chiefly armed with cross-bows, swords, and spears. They had also a few muskets, ten pieces of cannon, and four others call falconets. They had likewise sixteen horses on board the different vessels.

Such was the extent of an expedition fitted out by a few private adventurers, for the purpose of subverting the government of a monarch, whose dominions exceeded in extent the whole Spanish dominions in Europe. Notwithstanding the weakness of their force the adventurers themselves entertained no fears, nor had they any doubts of success.

Cortes touched at the island of Cozumel, on the east coast of Yucatan. Here he landed and refreshed his troops, before he conducted them to the country for which they were destined. At Cozumel he was fortunate enough to rescue from the Indians a Spaniard, whose name was Aguillar, who had been eight years a prisoner, and who afterwards proved extremely useful to him as an interpreter.

Having left Cozumel, the vessels proceeded onward, and arrived in the harbour of St. Juan de Ulloa, on the twenty-first of April, 1519. The adventurers landed; and, whilst the mind of Cortes was bent only on the conquest and subjugation of the country, the unsuspecting Indians, among whom were apparently some persons of distinction, approached them with every possible indication of amity and good will. These were deputies sent by two officers entrusted with the government of the province, by Montezuma, the Emperor of Mexico. The object of their mission was to inquire into the intention of Cortes in visiting their coast, and to offer him assistance in case he should need it, for the prosecution of his voyage. Cortes evaded their inquiries; landed all his troops, his horses and artillery; and the unsuspecting natives even assisted him in fortifying a camp, and erecting huts for the residence of his men. For this purpose they brought their axes edged with sharp flints.

With these they cut stakes, and fixed in the ground ; then interweaving the stakes with the boughs and leaves of palm trees, formed the walls and roofs of the huts with great ease and expedition. They also brought a quantity of strong cotton cloth with which they covered the officers' barrack, to protect them the more effectually from the burning heat of the sun ; and they supplied the Spaniards with abundance of provisions of every kind that the country afforded.

Cortes, on being introduced to the governors of the province, informed them that he was the ambassador of the king of Castile, the greatest monarch of the east ! That he came as a friend, to treat of subjects of the utmost importance and benefit to the two countries ; but that he could not communicate the tenor of his mission to any but the emperor himself. This intelligence gave the governors much uneasiness. They feared to mention it to Montezuma ; and, in a hope of being able to conciliate the favour of the Spaniards, they made them valuable presents of fine cotton cloth, plumes of various coloured feathers, and numerous ornaments of gold. These, however, were fatal gifts ; for they tended still more to excite the avaricious desires of Cortes and his companions : he now demanded, in an authoritative manner, to be admitted to a personal conference with the Emperor of Mexico.

A resolution, so peremptorily declared, was the cause of serious alarm to the Indians. They began to suspect, and not without reason, that the strangers entertained the most pernicious designs against their monarch and country. During an interview of the governors of the province with the Spaniards, several Mexican painters had directions to delineate, on white cotton cloth, the appearance of the ships, horses, artillery, soldiers, and other objects, which were so entirely new to the country, that the Mexican language had no words by which they could be described. These drawings Cortes was informed were to be sent to the emperor. On learning this he

directed his men to go through their various military evolutions, and exhibited the power and agility of his horses, a kind of animals till then unknown to the Mexicans. Suddenly, at a signal given by Cortes, the muskets were discharged, and soon afterwards the artillery. The Mexicans had beheld the whole exhibition with astonishment ; but when they heard the thunder of the cannons, and saw the dreadful havoc which the balls, that were fired from them, made upon the trees, they where overwhelmed with terror. Some of them ran away, others fell to the ground ; and it was not without the greatest difficulty that Cortes could regain their confidence.

An account of all these proceedings was sent to Montezuma, who immediately despatched messengers with presents, as to load a hundred Indians ; but with positive instructions that Cortes should immediately leave the Mexican dominions. Among the presents were two large plates of circular form ; the one of gold representing, by the embossments upon it, the sun ; and the other of silver, representing the moon. There was also a considerable quantity of jewels, pieces of gold, precious stones, collars of gold, and golden ornaments, in the shape of various kinds of birds and beasts. Cortes thanked the messengers for the presents, but declared that it was impossible he could depart until he had seen the emperor.

Finding that the part of the country in which he landed was sandy and inconvenient for a permanent establishment, Cortes despatched two vessels in search of some place more fertile, and at the same time nearer to the capital. A situation was found not far distant. Here Cortes disembarked his troops ; and established a colony, which he afterwards named Vera Cruz. To engage his followers the more completely in the enterprise he was about to undertake, he resolved to destroy his fleet. He told them that with united courage and perseverance, the project could scarcely fail of success ; and, by the persuasive powers of his eloquence, he

induced them to draw the vessels, to strip them of their sails, rigging, and iron-work, and finally to break them in pieces. Thus did about five hundred persons (for his company was now reduced to that number) consent to shut themselves up, in an hostile country, without any alternative for safety but their own valour.

There can scarcely occur in history a more extraordinary event, than that the rumour of the approach of five hundred men should strike terror and amazement into an empire so great and so powerful as that of Mexico. It was then in its greatest height of glory, and had under its dominion almost all the provinces of North America. These were either governed by Montezuma himself, or by petty kings, or caciques, as they were called, his tributaries. It extended, from east to west, more than two thousand miles, and from north to south upwards of eight hundred.

Several circumstances, however, were favourable to Cortes. Among these were the superiority of European weapons, valour, and discipline ; the despotic character of Montezuma, and the desire that many adjoining and conquered nations had for again obtaining their freedom and independence. The cacique of Zempoalla invited the assistance of Cortes against Montezuma ; and the Spanish commander, assenting to so advantageous a request, removed his troops to the capital of this chief. The walls of Zempoalla were covered with a white and shining kind of lime. This appearance filled the breasts of the invaders with ecstasy. Their minds bent solely on plunder, and their imaginations filled with the expectation of inexhaustible treasures, when they first approached the place, they believed that the walls were formed of silver.

From this place Cortes proceeded on his march towards Mexico, having been furnished by the cacique of Zempoalla with provisions, and with two hundred Indians to carry his baggage, and perform other servile offices. The country through which the Spaniards at



first passed, was fertile and pleasant, clad with trees and verdure, in a state of luxuriant cultivation. Afterwards, however, they had to traverse a cold and desert region, where they experienced many hardships from hail, rain, and piercing winds : and much inconvenience from a want of wholesome provisions.

Nothing particularly memorable occurred until they arrived at Tlascala. The inhabitants of this province were a warlike people, implacable enemies to the Mexicans. Informed that Cortes was about to visit the court of Mexico, they concluded that it was to seek the friendship of Montezuma ; they therefore, resolved to attack him with all their forces. The Tlascan army, consisting of many thousand men, covered an extensive plain. The bodies of these warriors were painted ; and they were adorned with great plumes of feathers, and armed with bows and arrows, slings, javelins, swords edged with flint, targets, and clubs. Many of them were clad in a kind of armour formed of thick cotton, and gilt. Previously to the battle the chiefs sent to the Spaniards three hundred turkeys, and two hundred baskets with bread. Of these the bearers desired the Spanish soldiers to eat freely, that when they were defeated, they might prove the more acceptable as sacrifices to the gods. The fight was commenced by the Tlascalans with the most determined courage and animosity ; but all their efforts were unavailing against the dreadful weapons, and steady discipline of their opponents. After great exertions, and almost incredible slaughter, the Tlascalan commanders were compelled to sue for peace. This was concluded to the satisfaction of both parties, and was particularly advantageous to Cortes, as this people ever afterwards remained firmly attached to him ; and he had reason to ascribe the final conquest of Mexico chiefly to their assistance.

The fame of the alliance between the Spaniards and the Tlascalans having reached Mexico, Montezuma at last resolved to assent to the interview that had been

requested by Cortes ; and endeavour, if possible, to persuade him to return. He consequently gave orders for his friendly reception into Chulula, one of his states. The Spaniards, however, reported that this was only a plot to throw them off their guard, and then suddenly fall upon them with the whole force of the Mexican army. Cortes, on a pretence of having discovered the plot, made a sudden attack upon the Mexicans, and slew six thousand of them without the loss of a single Spaniard.

Now advancing towards the city of Mexico, the Spaniards came within sight of the vast plain, covered with cultivated fields, with which it was surrounded. They also saw a lake resembling a sea in extent, encompassed with large towns ; and discovered the capital itself, adorned with numerous towers, and large buildings, situated on an island in the midst of the lake. The whole prospect was so different from any thing they had before seen, that, for an instant, they were inclined to consider it the work of enchantment.

Cortes halted his troops before the city ; and about four thousand Mexican chiefs, richly ornamented and crowned with feathers, came out to meet him. The emperor next appeared, with all the insignia of regal magnificence. He was carried on the shoulders of four of his principal favourites, in a chair of state embossed with gold, and adorned with feathers of various colours. Cortes dismounted from his horse to receive him : and at the same time Montezuma alighted and approached with a stately pace, his attendants as he proceeded covering the ground with cotton cloths, that he might not defile his feet. A signal was made for the Mexican chiefs to retire to a little distance ; the Spanish officers did the same ; Montezuma then addressing himself to Cortes : “ Illustrious stranger,” said he, “ before you disclose the important message, which the great monarch from whom you came has given you in command, it is necessary that we should understand our relative situa-

tions. You may have been informed by some that I am one of the immortal gods; that my wealth is exhaustless, and my palaces are covered with gold. On the other hand you may have heard, that I am tyrannical, proud, and cruel. By these different reports you are equally deceived. You behold that I am a mortal. My riches indeed are considerable, but my vassals speak of them as much greater than they really are : the walls of my palaces, as you see, are but stone and lime. In like manner, no doubt, has the severity of my government been magnified. But suspend your judgment for the present : when you know me better, you will find that what my rebellious subjects call oppression, is but the necessary execution of justice.

“After the same manner, have your actions been represented to us. Some speak of you as gods, affirming that the wild beasts obey you, and that you grasp the thunder in your hands, and command the elements; while others assure me you are wicked, revengeful, and proud; and transported with an insatiable thirst after the gold which our country produces. I am sensible you are of the same form and composition as other men, and distinguished from us only by such circumstances as the difference of countries occasions. These beasts (the horses), that obey you are probably a large species of deer which you have tamed, and bred up in such imperfect knowledge, as may be obtained by animals. Your weapons are made of a metal indeed unknown to us; and the fire which you discharge from them, with such an astonishing sound, may be formed by some secret art taught by your magicians. As to your actions, my ambassadors and servants inform me, that you are pious, courteous, and reasonable : that you bear hardships with patience and cheerfulness, and are liberal rather than covetous : so that we must each lay aside our prejudices and prepossessions, and rely only on what our eyes and experience may teach us.”

To this speech Cortes made an immediate reply, which

he concluded by stating that the king, his master, was desirous of a friendly alliance with the Mexicans, for various purposes of utility to them as well as to himself.

The emperor stated his readiness to accept of such an alliance: and, in the company of his chiefs, conducted Cortes to one of his palaces, so spacious, that it contained more than a hundred and fifty bed-chambers. Each of these was neatly matted, had hangings of cotton, ornamented with feathers; and was furnished with beds formed of mats, with pavilions over them. The whole building was surrounded by a stone wall, with towers at proper distances.

The first care of Cortes was to provide for his security. This he did by planting cannon in such situations as to point towards, and command the different avenues leading to the place appointed for his residence. And though Montezuma had been compelled to declare, that he and all his dominions were subject to him, yet Cortes observed the most active and vigilant discipline. His situation was indeed a very alarming one. At the head of a few hundred Spaniards he was shut up in a city that he had invaded, and in the midst of sixty thousand inhabitants, all hostile to him. It appeared impossible that he could succeed in his ultimate designs of taking possession of the country, without some extraordinary effort. It was proposed by some of his officers, to ask of Montezuma an abundant supply of gold and other valuables, on condition that they should retire from the country, and leave him in peace. But Cortes suggested a bolder measure; this was to seize Montezuma himself, notwithstanding the numbers by whom he was surrounded, and to carry him a prisoner to the Spanish quarters. With this design Cortes, accompanied by a chosen band of soldiers, went to Montezuma. He reproached him with having been the cause of an attack upon a party of Spaniards, in one of the distant provinces. Montezuma asserted his innocence; and, in case such an attack had been made, declared that the

offenders should immediately be brought to justice. As it was not to the purpose of Cortes to listen to reason, so he would hear none. He said that the only security he could have, for the future, would be obtained by Montezuma accompanying him to the Spanish quarters, and residing there. The unfortunate monarch, now completely in the power of his enemies, was led off by the Spanish soldiers, amidst the tears and lamentations of his people.

During the space of six months that Montezuma was thus imprisoned, he, unwillingly, permitted himself to be made the instrument of promoting all the designs of his enemies. Among other orders, he directed, at the request of Cortes, that all the naval stores which the Spaniards had deposited at Vera Cruz, should be conveyed by his people to Mexico. By means of these, and of a considerable quantity of timber which Montezuma ordered to be cut down for him, Cortes was enabled to build and fit out upon the lake of Mexico, two ships, which gave him the whole command of the city. He next prevailed with Montezuma to declare himself a subject of the king of Spain; and lastly proposed that he should compel the Mexicans to change their religion. But however complying Montezuma had been in other respects, he obstinately resisted this proposal. Cortes, therefore, leading out his soldiers, entered the grand temple of Mexico, threw down the images, destroyed all the vestments and utensils, and stripped it of every thing that was valuable. The people, now incited by their priests, were roused to fury. They were unanimously resolved to effect the destruction of the Spaniards, or to perish in the attempt.

At this juncture, a messenger arrived at the court of Mexico, with intelligence that eighteen other ships had appeared off the coast. This was a formidable armament, that had been fitted out against Cortes, by his enemy Velasquez. Cortes was aware of the intention of it, but he had the cunning to represent to Montezuma

that the strangers were come to his assistance. And, after leaving a hundred and fifty men in Mexico, he proceeded, with the remainder of his force, to Vera Cruz. In an interview with the newly arrived troops, he seduced them from their duty, by the offer of unbounded wealth and power; took prisoner the commander of the expedition; and was subsequently joined by almost all the men, nearly eight hundred in number, in his enterprise against the Mexicans.

During the absence of Cortes, the Mexicans had armed themselves, in the hope of exterminating their invaders. Wrought up to the highest pitch of fury, they attacked the Spaniards in their quarters, killed several of them, and destroyed their magazines, together with the two vessels that Cortes had built upon the lake. On receiving intelligence of these proceedings, Cortes hastened to Mexico, with such forces as he could collect. He attacked the Mexicans; but they fought with all the fury of persons devoted to death, rather than slavery; and at length the Spaniards, wearied with slaughter, were compelled to retire to their quarters. The Mexicans, by persevering in their endeavours, hoped that they should be able to induce their foes to expend all their ammunition; and at last, by also cutting off their provisions and resources, to be able to destroy them all. The most sanguinary battles were fought for several successive days. The Spaniards were assaulted with almost incessant showers of stones, pieces of timber, and firebrands from the houses of the city; and the arrows flew so thick, that the persons who were appointed to collect them, are said to have burnt more than forty cart loads.

Cortes found it necessary to dislodge a party of Mexicans from a high tower which overlooked the Spanish quarters. He forced his way to the top, where two young Mexicans, seizing him in their arms, threw themselves from the tower, in the hope of dragging their foe along with them. He disengaged himself



from their grasp, and the gallant youths perished in a vain endeavour to save their country.



Cortes, reduced to the utmost extremity, brought forward Montezuma, and compelled him to entreat his subjects to cease from hostilities. They adored their monarch, but this proposal was received with indignation: they discharged a volley of arrows, and stones, with one of which the unhappy prince was slain.

The Spaniards, finding themselves overpowered by numbers, and reduced to the utmost distress by famine, now prepared for a precipitate retreat from the city; and they resolved to attempt this by stealth in the dead of the night. Their motions, however, were watched; and, while they were silently proceeding along one of the causeways of the lake, they were suddenly alarmed by the warlike shouts of the Mexicans, and assailed with innumerable weapons. The conflict became tremendous. Cortes, however, effected his retreat over

the bodies of the slain ; and, when he mustered his forces, on the ensuing day, he found that he had lost half his troops, all his artillery, and nearly the whole of his horses. He continued his retreat to the territories of the Tlascalans.

To picture the distress that other Spaniards suffered, who were not in the immediate train of Cortes, we may mention that on one of the trees which they passed, was found cut in the Spanish language the following words : “ This way passed the unfortunate John Juste, and his unhappy companions, who were reduced to such want of food, that they gave a wedge of gold, weighing eight hundred pieces of eight, for a few little cakes of Indian wheat.” This John Juste and his companions had been the bearers of Cortes’s equipage to Mexico.

Notwithstanding all his disasters, the resolution of Cortes was yet unsubdued. After the expiration of about six months, he returned to Mexico with a reinforcement of ten thousand Tlascalans. His first care was to build other vessels upon the lake to supply the place of those he had lost. The Mexicans perceiving the advantages that this would give him, directed their first attention against his fleet. The reigning emperor, who had been the nephew of Montezuma, hoping to supply by numbers what he wanted in force, collected such a multitude of canoes as almost covered the face of the lake. This whole armament, however, was soon dispersed by the superior skill of the Spaniards : and many thousands of Mexicans perished in the water.

Still was Cortes surrounded with difficulties, apparently insurmountable. He at first proceeded slowly and cautiously in his operations ; but at length, disconcerted by the tediousness and difficulty of the siege, he resolved to make one furious attack ; and, if possible, to take the city by storm. A general assault was ordered, and a mistake that the Spaniards committed, in leaving their rear without protection, enabled the Mexicans to cut off their retreat. All the efforts of Cortes were now requi-

site ; and he himself narrowly escaped being taken by six Mexican chiefs, who had seized and were hurrying him off in triumph. From this perilous situation he was rescued by two of his officers, at the expense of their own lives ; but he lost a great number of his men, forty of whom fell alive into the hands of the Mexicans. At the approach of night, in all the savage delight of revenge, they sacrificed these men to their god of war, and sent their heads to the chiefs of the adjacent provinces, with an assurance that their deity had declared, with an audible voice, that every Spaniard should be destroyed in eight days.

This prediction was universally credited by the Indians ; and the Spaniards, almost immediately afterwards, found themselves without a single ally. Even the Tlascalans were alarmed and forsook them. But Cortes contrived to make it the means of his final success. He suspended all military operations, till the fatal period had elapsed. The Indians then believing that their gods had deceived the Mexicans, returned with greater confidence than ever to their alliance with him. According to his own account, Cortes was soon at the head of a hundred and fifty thousand Indians. By his vessels on the lake, and his numerous Indian auxiliaries, he was now enabled to invest the city so completely, that famine soon began to make dreadful ravages among the Mexican garrison. The chief advised their emperor to retire from a place in which it was impossible they could much longer continue. To accomplish this they endeavoured to deceive Cortes by various proposals of submission ; but he was too vigilant to be deceived. The emperor was taken prisoner, in attempting to escape across the lake ; and, with him, both the city and empire fell into the hands of the Spaniards.

After Cortes had made arrangements for securing the possession of Mexico, he penetrated across the country to the opposite sea, and there erected forts and built ships, for the purpose of making discoveries on that side. He

also began to rebuild the city, which in the late war had been almost wholly demolished. He assigned places for churches and other public buildings ; divided the best part of the ground among the Spaniards, and the rest among the natives. For himself he erected a magnificent palace upon the ground where the palace of Montezuma had formerly stood. All his conquests, however, did not procure him peace. Sometimes he was in danger from the enmity of the Indians, sometimes from the discontent and revolt of the Spaniards, but chiefly from the intrigues of his enemies in Cuba, and at the court of Spain.

Hitherto he had acted without any authority from the Spanish government, and after he had completed the reduction of Mexico, an officer was sent from Europe to supersede him in his command. The person, however, who was entrusted with this commission, being a man of no talent, soon found himself unequal to the task, and abandoned a country which he was unable to govern. The consequence of this man's return to Spain, was a confirmation of the authority of Cortes, by a warrant from the crown, appointing him captain-general, and governor of all the countries which he had conquered, and which henceforward had the appellation of New Spain.

His enemies, however, still continued to plot against him, and at length induced the Spanish ministers to order a solemn inquest to be made into his proceedings. Cortes, disdaining to be tried as a culprit in a country that was filled with the fame of his exploits, resolved to return to Spain, and there to justify himself before a competent tribunal. He fitted out two ships for this voyage, and embarking with several of his friends from Vera Cruz, arrived in his native country, in the month of December, 1527.

*Louisa.*—I am extremely desirous to know how he was received, and whether he was punished.

*Frederic.*—On his arrival in Spain, he appeared with all the splendour which fame and riches could confer ; and the king of Spain, instead of directing any hostile proceedings against him, received him with the highest marks of distinction and respect ; conferred on him the title of marquis ; admitted him to the same familiar intercourse that was enjoyed by noblemen of the first rank ; and at length permitted him to return to Mexico.

*Sir Charles.*—True, Frederic ; but though Cortes was thus distinguished, there still existed so much jealousy respecting him, and such fear of his assuming too extensive a power, that although he did return, and dignified with new titles, it was with a greatly diminished authority. The supreme direction of civil affairs was taken from him ; the military department, with powers and authority to attempt new discoveries, were alone left in his hands.

*Lady Irwin.*—What was the consequence of this procedure ?

*Sir Charles.*—It cramped his efforts, and embittered his whole remaining life.

*Frederic.*—But it did not diminish his zeal for further discoveries and fresh conquests. He fitted out an armament, took the command of it in person ; and, after enduring almost incredible hardships, discovered the large peninsula of California. In this expedition he marched above three thousand miles, through a country thinly inhabited, and almost uncultivated : abounding with thick forests, rugged mountains, and deep rivers. Cortes was engaged in this service more than two years ; and, though it was not distinguished by any splendid event, he displayed, during the course of it, greater personal courage, more fortitude of mind, more patience, and greater perseverance, than he had done at any former period of his life.

During his absence, his power in Mexico was so much reduced, that he resolved again to seek the redress of his grievances in Spain.

*Louisa.*—And was he received with the same cordiality as before ?

*Frederic.*—No ; the fame of his adventures no longer excited the public attention. He returned once more to his native country, but was now little noticed ; and he died neglected, in the year 1547, and the sixty-second year of his age.

*Lady Irwin.*—The conduct of Cortes, notwithstanding what has been denominated the splendour of his victories, appears to me to have been in every respect unjustifiable. Under the pretext of propagating the Christian religion, he was guilty of the most atrocious cruelties. Ambition and avarice, not piety, were his real motives for conquest. The exertions of his mind appear to have been solely directed towards the acquisition of wealth and power.

*Mr. Allen.*—Dr. Robertson, in his history of America, has inserted a long account of Cortes, which does more honour to his pen than his judgment. It is a laboured defence of cruelties which are indefensible ; and is calculated to present to the mind of the reader, the idea of a magnanimous and politic hero, instead of an insatiate invader, a murderer wholly insensible to the true character of the victories which he accomplished by his arms.



## FIFTH EVENING.

*Edmund.*—I fear that the hero, of whose conquests I have this evening prepared a narrative, cannot be considered in any view more favourable than his contemporary, whose life and adventures were the subject of attention yesterday. FRANCIS PIZARRO, the conqueror of Peru, has certainly as little claim for notice, on account of his virtues, as the invader of Mexico. The



course of his conquests, however, records at every step a discovery of coasts, islands, rivers, districts, and tribes, which had never been visited before ; and I have only to regret that the necessity of confining my remarks within narrow limits, and chiefly to his personal exploits, should have prevented my entering into such a detail respecting the countries and people that he visited, as, from their importance, they deserve.

*Louisa.*—The name, and some of the exploits of Pizarro are sufficiently familiar to me ; but I am entirely ignorant of his early history.

*Edmund.*—He was the illegitimate son of a Spanish gentleman ; but was so shamefully neglected by his father, as, at one time, to have been put to the mean employment of feeding hogs. As soon as he arrived at manhood, he enlisted into the Spanish army, and served, for some time, in Italy. He then embarked for the West Indies, where he soon obtained promotion. Pizarro distinguished himself as a bold and enterprising officer, in the wars of Hispaniola and Cuba.

*Lady Irwin.*—Was not Pizarro entirely uneducated ?

*Edmund.*—When he first entered the army, he was unable even to read ; and whatever knowledge he subsequently acquired, was attained by his own talents and indefatigable exertion.

*Mr. Allen.*—Pizarro was a man of powerful and comprehensive mind, and apparently formed for command. He was also remarkable for an utter disdain of every species of hardship and danger.

*Edmund.*—After his signal conduct in the West Indies, he sailed with the Spanish captain Hojeda, to Panama, where the Spaniards had, at that time, a colony. He had not long been there before he entered into an association with two other persons, Diego de Almagro, also a military adventurer, and Hernando de Luque, a priest, for the purpose of prosecuting discoveries in Peru, and other countries on the western coast of South America.

*Lady Irwin.*—To prosecute discoveries? You should rather say to enrich and aggrandize themselves by plunder, by conquest, and the oppression of unoffending people.

*Sir Charles.*—Just so; and the attempt was a most desperate one; for it had often been made before, but had failed, through the inability or mismanagement of the persons concerned in it.

*Edmund.*—But, Sir, it was now in the hands of at least one person, whose enterprising and determined spirit was not likely to be overcome by common dangers, or slight difficulties.

*Lady Irwin.*—How, Edmund, were the expenses of so great an undertaking to be defrayed?

*Edmund.*—Pizarro himself had been able to realize a considerable property, and each of his comrades had sufficient wealth to enable them, jointly, to purchase and fit out one vessel first. The enterprise was countenanced by the governor of Panama; and in this ship, the command of which was given to Pizarro, a hundred and fourteen men were embarked.

*Louisa.*—Only a hundred and fourteen men to effect the conquest of more than as many thousands! Who could be so rash as to imagine that so small a number would not all be cut off and destroyed?

*Edmund.*—You will soon be convinced what astonishing difficulties were to be overcome by united courage and perseverance.

#### NARRATIVE OF THE CONQUEST OF PERU.

PIZARRO, as I have stated, sailed from Panama with one ship, and one hundred and fourteen men; taking his departure in the month of November, 1524; at the very worst season of the year, when the periodical winds blew directly against his course. He encountered many difficulties, but at length arrived at Port Pinas, on the south side of the bay of Panama. Here he landed his

little army, and boldly endeavoured to penetrate into the interior of the country. But after experiencing innumerable hardships in passing through bogs, woods, and mountains, deluged with rain, and yet in a burning climate and undergoing all the horrors of famine and disease, he was compelled to return at the very moment when he had arrived within sight of a better country. The only alternative that Pizarro now had was to establish himself in an island near the coast, until he could be joined by a reinforcement under the command of his comrade, Almagro.

This shortly afterwards reached him ; and having now an effective force of about two hundred Spaniards, Pizarro recommenced his enterprise, in conjunction with Almagro. They endeavoured to sail along the coast to the southward, in two vessels and three large canoes. In this navigation they suffered great fatigue ; for, by contrary winds and currents, they were compelled to row their vessels nearly the whole distance. Many of the men died from famine ; and others were killed by the attacks of the Indians, on their various attempts to land. It was therefore necessary to send Almagro (who had himself lost an eye in one of these skirmishes) twice back to Panama for reinforcements. By the vessel that conveyed him, several of the soldiers of Pizarro secretly forwarded to the governor of Panama, a petition to be recalled. The governor, therefore, instead of authorizing the departure of any others, on an enterprise of so much danger, sent a vessel and an officer to Pizarro, with an order that such of his men as were desirous of returning to Panama, might be permitted to do so. The consequence was, that out of his whole number, only twelve men chose to remain with their commander.

With these few intrepid associates, Pizarro determined to proceed, at least on a voyage of discovery ; though, for the present, he was compelled to give up all thoughts of conquest. He was absent from Panama three years, during which time, he had been able to

proceed little further south than the Bay of Guayaquil. In this voyage, he and his companions were exposed to many dangers, fatigues, and privations, by navigating unknown seas, by the opposition and hostility of the Indians, and by famine. But Pizarro was most of all distressed by the discontents and mutinies of his own people. At length he was compelled to return to Panama, ruined in his fortune, and apparently overwhelmed with difficulties. Still, however, he did not despair of ultimate success.

In concert with his associates, Almagro and Luque, he went to Spain, to lay before the king an account of the countries he had seen ; and to solicit for himself the office of governor over such as he should be able to conquer. This office he obtained ; but the king contributed no aid whatever towards the undertaking. Pizarro returned to Panama, accompanied by several adventurers from Spain ; and, aided by a considerable sum of money, which was supplied by Cortes, the conqueror of Mexico, he and his associates used every effort to complete the preparations for their new enterprise. Some unpleasantness, however, in the mean while, arose betwixt Almagro and Pizarro ; but this was soon amicably adjusted.

Pizarro sailed, in the beginning of the year 1531, with an armament, consisting of three vessels, and a hundred and eighty soldiers, thirty-six of whom were horsemen ; and landed in the Bay of St. Matthew, on the coast of Peru. He was now compelled to make a long and painful march, during which his troops suffered extreme hardships from scarcity of provisions, and the difficulty of passing several rivers which intersected their line of march. In one of the Peruvian towns, Pizarro seized a vast quantity of gold. This he sent to Panama, as a specimen of the riches of the country, and to induce other adventurers to join him. His associates also obtained a great number of valuable emeralds ; but, ignorant of the nature of these stones, they broke several

of them with hammers ; imagining that good emeralds, like diamonds, ought to bear the stroke of a hammer without breaking. Pizarro afterwards went to the island of Puna, where he was joined by a reinforcement of horse and foot from Panama.

With this addition to his force he returned to the continent. He pretended to offer terms of amity to the inhabitants of such towns as he approached ; but they saw him to be so intent upon plunder, that they were unable to trust to his professions ; and such of the Indian warriors as were present, retreated before him.

It was a circumstance peculiarly favourable to the designs of Pizarro, that the power of the Peruvian empire was at this time weakened in consequence of an obstinate civil war. This had been occasioned by the revolt of Atahualpa, one of the Peruvian chiefs, from allegiance to his half-brother Huascar, the lawful sovereign of Peru ; in consequence of the refusal of the latter to give up to him the kingdom of Quito, according to the last will of his father. Pizarro having learned the state of the country, sent messengers to Atahualpa, offering the aid of the Spanish forces to establish him on the throne of Peru. Atahualpa succeeded in his project without this assistance ; but, in consequence of the apparent friendship of the Spaniards, they were permitted to advance, without molestation, to the town of Caxamarca, about twelve days' journey from the sea-coast.

Whilst on the way, they were met by an envoy from Atahualpa, bearing presents from that prince, consisting of ornaments of gold, set with emeralds and other precious stones. Pizarro received the envoy with much kindness, and promised, in every respect, to act according to the wishes of Atahualpa. He desired the envoy to inform his sovereign, that he might be assured of receiving no injury from the Spaniards ; he required only that the Peruvians should treat them as friends and allies.

On his arrival at Caxamarca, Pizarro found another

messenger from Atahualpa ; who, now fearful of treachery, in consequence of unfavourable reports that had reached him respecting the Spaniards, requested they would not enter that place, until they received especial permission for that purpose. Pizarro, wholly regardless of the message, proceeded, without delay, to take possession of it, and to appropriate as his quarters a large court, on one side of which was a palace of the inca, or prince, and on the other a temple of the sun, to which luminary the Peruvians paid divine adoration. The whole was surrounded by a strong wall or rampart of earth.

When he had posted his troops in this advantageous situation, Pizarro sent one of his officers at the head of twenty horsemen, to the camp of Atahualpa, about a league distant. These men, who were introduced into the royal presence with great ceremony, were astonished at the abundance of gold and jewels which they beheld. They were served with perfumed liquors by two princesses, in vessels of gold set with emeralds : and were received and treated with every possible mark of kindness and distinction. A brother of the Spanish commander soon afterwards arrived at the camp, with more horsemen. Through the medium of an interpreter he stated to the king, that Pizarro was desirous of having an audience of his majesty, that he might communicate to him in person a message of friendship, which he had in charge from the king of Spain. Atahualpa replied, that he accepted with pleasure the offer of friendship ; and said that on the following day he would, in person, visit the Spanish commander at his camp. After this interview, the brother of Pizarro, previously to his return, contrived to take a survey of the Peruvian army.

Atahualpa, according to his appointment, entered the Spanish camp. He was borne in state, in a kind of litter, on the shoulders of four of his nobles, preceded by about three hundred Indians, all richly ornamented, and followed by a numerous train of chiefs or caciques. During



the conference which ensued, the Spaniards, taking advantage of the unsuspecting good faith of Atahualpa, perfidiously attacked the Peruvians ; and, having slaughtered many of them, took their monarch prisoner.

The pretence for the attack was this. After the arrival of Atahualpa, an ecclesiastic attached to the suite of Pizarro, whose name was Valverde, approached the king, holding a crucifix in one hand, and his breviary in the other. He addressed the monarch in an extravagant discourse, threatening, that if he were not thereby converted to Christianity, and did not acknowledge the Pope to be the vicegerent of God upon earth, his people should immediately be attacked by fire and sword. This discourse was imperfectly rendered to Atahualpa, by an ignorant interpreter. The monarch inquired where all the things he had heard were to be learnt. The interpreter was instructed to say, that they were contained in a book called the word of God. Atahualpa requested to see the book. A Bible was put into his hands. Having been misled by the ignorance of the interpreter, he turned over its leaves backward and forward for some time ; then saying that it told him nothing, threw it on the ground. The ecclesiastic immediately turned to the Spaniards, exclaiming, "To arms! Christians! to arms! the word of God is insulted."

On this perfidious pretence, the Peruvians were immediately attacked ; hundreds of them were slain, and Atahualpa himself, unsuspecting of the treacherous projects of the Spaniards, was dragged by his hair from the litter in which he sat, and carried off in chains a prisoner to the Spanish camp. The Peruvian soldiers fled in dismay on every side, and Pizarro was left the sole master of a disgraceful field.

The spoils obtained by this inhuman victory were collected and brought to the camp. They consisted of large vessels of gold and silver, splendid garments, jewels and ornaments belonging to the monarch, his family, and

the numerous chiefs who came to the conference. On the ensuing day Pizarro sent a detachment of his forces to plunder the Peruvian camp. These obtained another rich booty, although they were informed that the Peruvian generals had carried off no fewer than three thousand loads of gold and silver, before they arrived.



Atahualpa, observing this insatiable thirst for the precious metals, offered, for his ransom, as much gold as would fill a large chamber in the castle of Caxamarca; beside a mass of silver so large, that the Spaniards would be unable to carry the whole of it away. Pizarro was astonished; and instantly promised to restore him to freedom, on the fulfilment of this condition. Peruvian messengers were immediately despatched through the empire: and all the gold and silver that could be collected were ordered to be brought to Caxamarca. That the Spaniards might not doubt his ability to perform what he had promised, Atahualpa imprudently requested that certain of the Spanish officers should accompany his people to the city of Cuzco, where the royal treasures

were chiefly deposited; and two of them, in whom Pizarro had great confidence, were sent accordingly.

During these proceedings Almagro had raised a considerable body of forces at Panama, with intention of conquering, for himself, certain provinces of America, south of the country that had been invaded by Pizarro. But when he received intelligence of the extraordinary successes of his associate, he changed his purpose and determined to join him. Almagro accordingly sailed for Peru; and sometime afterwards arrived at the Spanish camp; but from this period great jealousy prevailed betwixt the two chiefs, though they continued to treat each other externally with respect.

The treasures that had been promised by Atahualpa, were brought to Caxamarca, and accepted by Pizarro. A certain portion of them was distributed among his soldiers; and, possessed of this enormous wealth, they were, for some time, guilty of every species of excess. Atahualpa, however, did not obtain his release; although this enormous ransom had been paid, he was, by a dishonest and disgraceful breach of faith, still detained a prisoner.

In the distribution of the treasures, Pizarro, according to his agreement, sent one-fifth part of the whole, under the care of one of his brothers, to Spain, and in return he solicited such reinforcements, as might tend permanently to establish the Spanish dominion in Peru.

A short time after this, Atahualpa was compelled to undergo the infamous mockery of a trial, upon an imputation, among other things, that, in conjunction with several of his chiefs, he had plotted the destruction of the Spaniards. The insults of this trial, superadded by bigotry to make him die a Christian, without being able, through the miserable interpreters that were employed, to make him comprehend a single article of the christian faith,—all contribute to accumulate disgrace upon the head of the treacherous and unfeeling conqueror. These, concluding with his condemnation and murder, form such odious additions to the reproachful scenes

acted by the Spaniards in America, as nothing can either palliate or obliterate. The sentence pronounced on this unhappy monarch was that he should be burnt alive ; but this, by an infamous mockery of the christian religion, was afterwards commuted for the punishment of strangling, on condition that he should assent to be baptized, and to die a Christian. This of course he did, though wholly ignorant of what could be meant by the ceremony of baptism ; and for the purpose only of being relieved from torture. He was baptized by Valverde, on the evening after his trial ; and, to the everlasting disgrace of all who had been concerned in so iniquitous a procedure, was strangled the following morning. After the murder of Atahualpa, the Peruvian nation, in a determination to revenge his death, elected as their inca, or emperor, Mango Capac, a full brother of the dethroned emperor, Huascar ; and proceeded to increase their army. Pizarro, threatened on all sides by danger, saw no alternative but to march immediately to Cuzco, the capital ; and to intimidate the Peruvians by the audacity of his measures. He consequently proceeded thither with his whole force, consisting of about four hundred Europeans, and some parties of Indians who had joined him.

During the march he was surprised by the sudden attack of a body of Peruvians. In this rencounter several of his men were killed, and many others made prisoners. One of the latter, who was known to have been actively concerned in the murder of Atahualpa, the Peruvians, in revenge, strangled on the same spot where their emperor had been put to death. The Peruvians now offered to enter into negotiations for peace, and assented to every article which the Spaniards proposed to them ; but Pizarro refused to be bound even by his own engagements, and shortly afterwards declared that he would be content with nothing short of an unconditional surrender of the country. This the Peruvians of course opposed ; for they could have no confidence

in men who, hitherto, had been faithless in all their proceedings.

Pizarro took the city of Cuzco ; and obtained there a booty, in gold, silver, and jewels, not less in value than all that had been collected at Caxamarca, for the ransom of Atahualpa. He made a division of this among his soldiers, and settled a colony in Cuzco.

After this Pizarro, having given to Almagro the care of guarding the frontiers of the country, went himself to complete the conquest of the distant provinces. In this excursion he founded the two cities of Lima and Truxillo, assigning to the Spaniards at each place, lands and people according to their several conditions. In the mean time advices were received that the Spanish government had confirmed the several requests that had been made by Pizarro, and had elevated him to the rank of the nobility, with the title of marquis. To Almagro was given the government of two hundred leagues of country southward of that assigned to Pizarro, together with the title of Marshal of Peru.

Whilst Pizarro was at Truxillo, he received information that Almagro, who had been joined by a considerable force of Spaniards and Indians, was making preparations to take possession of Cuzco, under an allegation that this city was within the limits assigned to him by the Spanish government. Pizarro hastened thither, and arrived in time to prevent it from falling into their hands. This was the commencement of a rupture between the two chiefs, which, though it was afterwards so far settled that they acted in concert during the subsequent reduction of the kingdom of Chili, terminated in the death of them both. Almagro indeed concealed his intentions, but he never gave up the design of rendering himself master of Cuzco on the first opportunity that should occur. After the settlement of affairs in Chili, he suddenly returned, and, during the absence of Pizarro at Lima, succeeded in his project.

A body of Peruvian soldiers, who had blockaded Pizarro in the city of Lima, hearing that a powerful reinforcement of Spaniards had arrived at Cuzco, and, not acquainted with the rupture that had taken place betwixt Almagro and Pizarro, retired. This afforded Pizarro an opportunity of marching out, and proceeding to support his interests in Cuzco. Almagro strongly fortified himself in the mountains near that city, and broke up all the roads to render the approach to his camp as difficult as possible. The camp, however, was forced, and many successive battles being fought, the forces under Almagro were at last totally defeated, and himself taken prisoner. Although upwards of seventy years of age, he was tried, convicted, and condemned to die; and was, afterwards, privately strangled in prison. He was succeeded in command by his son Diego de Almagro, who collected, against Pizarro, a powerful force of united Spaniards and Peruvians. With these he attacked that general by surprise, in his palace, in the city of Lima, on the twenty-ninth of June, 1541. Pizarro, undaunted by the danger of his situation, fought with the most determined bravery; but being stabbed in the throat with a sword, he fell to the ground and expired. His body was dragged into the church, where no one even dared to bury it, till a man, who had formerly been one of his servants, obtained permission to do so. This man was the sole mourner at his grave; and defrayed the expenses of the interment from his own funds.

*Louisa.*—In his anxiety to speak of the personal exploits of Pizarro, Edmund has entirely omitted to describe the Peruvians. He ought not to have done so, for it was to their actions that we have been indebted for so much of the history of Pizarro.

*Edmund.*—The only mode in which I can atone for this omission will be to describe them now. They were a swarthy and well-formed race of people. The men



wore their hair short, and had the crown of the head shaved in the circular form. They were, for the most part, clad in cotton shirts or jackets without sleeves, which did not extend below the waist. Many of them had ornaments of gold suspended from their ears and nostrils, and bracelets of gold or silver on their arms. Their weapons were bows, arrows, slings, and spears. The women wore no other clothing than a short petticoat, which reached from the waist to the knees, and, contrary to the custom of most other countries, they were prohibited the use of ornaments of any kind.

*Lady Irwin.*—The life of Pizarro appears to me a very instructive one.

*Mr. Allen.*—It is so. By the narrative that Edmund has just read to us, we have seen that, in a short space of time, a private individual, by little more than his personal exertions, was enabled to discover a vast extent of country, containing wealthy kingdoms; and by the bravery and persevering endeavours of himself and a few associates, was able to make himself master of a powerful empire, and to bestow on several individuals such ample fortunes and extensive revenues as none of the richest and most potent monarchs of whom we read in history, had ever given away in so short a time. Yet was this man at last assassinated by only twelve persons, at noon day, and in the midst of a city, the whole inhabitants of which were his creatures, his servants, kinsmen, friends, and soldiers. Even his domestic servants fled, in dismay, from the house, and abandoned him to his fate. Though he died possessed of wealth that might have purchased empires, his mutilated remains were dragged unregretted into a church, and buried at the expense of a single charitable individual.

*Lady Irwin.*—To me it appears that the designs of Providence are strongly illustrated by these events. He who assumed a right to conquer an independent, and to him an unoffending people,—who committed the most atrocious cruelties,—who, under a pretence of converting

men to Christianity, was seeking only for wealth and power,—he at last fell a victim solely to his own ambition.

*Louisa.*—If the only means the Spaniards took to convert the Peruvians were such as Edmund has mentioned respecting Atahualpa, it appears wholly impossible it would have been attended with success.

*Frederic.*—But, bad as Pizarro was, it must not be denied that he had some good qualities. His kindness and unostentatious liberality to such as were dependent upon him, are not, I believe, to be doubted. I could enumerate several instances, but will only mention one.

He had been informed that one of his soldiers had lost a horse of great value. In expectation that he should find the man in a tennis-court belonging to his house, he went thither, carrying with him a solid piece of gold of ten pounds weight, which he meant to present him with. Not finding the soldier there, Pizarro himself engaged in a game of tennis, but without taking off his coat, lest the gold that he carried should be discovered. After having played more than three hours the man came in. Pizarro took him aside, and gave him the gold; at the same time telling him, that he would rather have given him thrice as much than have been obliged to carry that heavy weight so long.

*Louisa.*—This was certainly an act of kindness, but the liberality could have been little, if Pizarro possessed all the riches which the narrative of my brother would lead us to suppose.

*Sir Charles.*—The only points in the character of Pizarro which have any real claim on our admiration, are his military talents, his courage, and sagacity. His pretext of religion was but a cover for perfidy; and his incessant acts of cruelty towards the Peruvian nation excite unqualified abhorrence.

## SIXTH EVENING.

FREDERIC MONTAGU observed, that himself and Edmund had been much perplexed respecting our famous circumnavigator and admiral, SIR FRANCIS DRAKE, whether his life ought to be introduced among the lives of voyagers, or of admirals. "At last," said Edmund, "we have resolved to divide him, by speaking now of his early life, and his voyage round the globe; and leaving his naval exploits, that were subsequent to these, as a topic for the future." This arrangement having been acceded to, Frederic stated that Drake was the eldest of twelve sons of a mariner who had lived in a village near Tavistock, in Devonshire; and that, from the poverty of his father, the care and expense of his education had devolved upon Captain John Hawkins, kinsman of his mother.

*Lady Irwin.*—Was this the same Captain Hawkins who, some years afterwards, was knighted for his services, in the defeat of the Spanish Armada?

*Edmund.*—It was; and, by his interest, when Drake was about eighteen years of age, he was appointed the purser or steward of a small trading vessel——

*Frederic.*—And he was so diligent and attentive to his duty, rendered himself so skilful in navigation, and gave so many proofs of his fidelity and integrity, that his master, at his death, bequeathed to him the vessel, as a reward for his services.

*Mr. Allen.*—This circumstance deserves to be remembered, not only as it tends to illustrate the private character of a brave man, but as it may be a hint to all who may hereafter propose his conduct for their imitation—that virtue is the surest basis both of reputation and fortune, and that the first step towards being great is to be honest.

*Frederic.*—It may easily be imagined that a person

of Drake's comprehensive mind would soon become weary of so limited a sphere of action as trading betwixt England and the Bay of Biscay, which he had hitherto done. He consequently sold his little vessel, and engaged in a trade to the West Indies. In this he embarked his whole fortune, the result of his own industry, and of his late master's kindness.

*Edmund.*—And it proved at the time a most unfortunate speculation for him.

*Louisa.*—How so, Edmund.

*Edmund.*—By an attack of the Spaniards, in violation of a treaty of peace then subsisting between Spain and England, and without any declaration of hostilities, he lost his ship, and with it his whole property.

*Sir Charles.*—And was no application made to the Spanish government for redress?

*Edmund.*—Yes; repeated applications were made, aided even by letters from Queen Elizabeth; but the Spaniards were deaf to all remonstrance.

*Louisa.*—This appears to have been very unjust. It was, no doubt, long before he recovered from so unlooked-for a wreck of all his hopes.

*Frederic.*—No: though thus oppressed and impoverished, Drake still retained both his courage and his industry; still retained that ardent spirit which had prompted him to adventures, and that indefatigable perseverance which enabled him to surmount the most extraordinary difficulties. He did not idly sit down to lament misfortunes which he conceived it to be in his power to remedy; or to repine at poverty, while the wealth of his enemies was to be gained. His first determination was to make a voyage to America, for the sake of obtaining intelligence respecting the state of the Spanish settlements, and acquainting himself with the seas and coasts of that quarter of the world. He made a second voyage for the same purpose; and finally projected an important expedition, by which, he said, "the Spaniards should find how imprudently they act who injure and insult a

brave man." He no sooner announced the plan of this enterprise, than he was supplied with abundant assistance to equip an armament adequate to the achievement of what he meditated. He sailed from Plymouth in March, 1572, with two small armed vessels, and a force of about seventy-three men.

*Louisa.*—I cannot imagine he would be able to accomplish much with so small a force.

*Frederic.*—Small as it was, he ventured, at the head of it to attack the Spanish town of Nombre de Dios, in the province of Darien; and in a few hours succeeded in taking it.

*Louisa.*—Indeed! And what was the consequence?

*Edmund.*—The royal treasury in this town utterly astonished his men. They entered a room in which silver was heaped up in bars, and in such quantity as almost to exceed belief. The pile is estimated to have been seventy feet in length, ten in breadth, and twelve in height; and each bar weighed from thirty to thirty-five pounds.

*Louisa.*—His former losses must now have been amply recompensed.

*Frederic.*—Unfortunately not so; for, through the cowardice and mismanagement of some of his men, the flying enemy were mistaken, at a distance, for large reinforcements advancing to overpower them. An alarm was given; Drake nearly fainted with loss of blood, from a dangerous wound he had received in his leg, during the assault; they carried him off to the boats; and thus abandoned the richest spoils that ever raised the expectations of adventurers such as these.

*Mr. Allen.*—It was afterwards known that the treasure they lost amounted to more than eight hundred thousand pounds weight of silver; besides several iron chests filled with gold of still greater value.

*Louisa.*—How truly mortifying! What he had undergone so much danger to obtain, had been in his possession; and to leave it thus, must have been almost beyond endurance.

*Frederic.*—Drake insisted upon making another attempt, but the Spaniards were now on their guard; and he was compelled to return to his ships, with little other success than taking a vessel laden with wine.

*Mr. Allen.*—Notwithstanding so great a disappointment, on this, as on other occasions, he did not allow either his ill or good success to prevail over his piety: as soon as he had rejoined his men on board the ships, he celebrated their meeting with thanks to God.

*Frederic.*—Drake was not to be diverted from his designs by disappointment. He continued for several months near the coast of different parts of Spanish America; and, entering into an alliance with the Symerons, an Indian tribe, who were at war with the Spaniards, was informed by them of many particulars respecting the conveyance of the treasures of the American mines, from Panama over land to Nombre de Dios. By accidents and disease he had lost no fewer than twenty-eight of his men; yet in the beginning of the year 1573, he resolved upon the desperate attempt, in conjunction with the Symerons, of crossing the isthmus of Panama, in the hope of intercepting one of the convoys of these treasures.

*Lady Irwin.*—You have said, that the whole force with which he sailed from England consisted only of seventy-three persons. It should appear that he had only forty-five left. Of these it must doubtless have been requisite to leave a considerable portion to guard the vessels during his absence; he could therefore have taken only very few men with him?

*Frederic.*—He took only eighteen. I have drawn up a short account of this enterprise, which, if you please, I will now read.

#### NARRATIVE OF DRAKE'S EXPEDITION ACROSS THE ISTHMUS OF PANAMA.

WITH eighteen Englishmen, and thirty of the Symeron Indians commanded by a chief named Pedro, Captain



Drake, having previously furnished himself with all things necessary for so arduous a journey, set out from Port Diego, on the third of February. The Symérons were not only to serve as guides, but were to be the purveyors in procuring provisions; they were armed with bows, arrows, and spears; and the Englishmen had bows and arrows, and muskets.

They every day began their march at sunrise; and, having travelled till about ten o'clock, rested near some river till twelve. They then travelled till four, and reposed all night in huts which the Symérons had either left standing in their former marches, or erected for the occasion, by driving a few posts into the ground, and forming a kind of roof with the branches and leaves of trees.

In their march they were supplied not only with plenty of fruit, but also with great numbers of wild swine, which the Symérons killed for them. On the third day after the commencement of the journey, they came to a town of the Symérons, situated on the side of a hill, and encompassed with a ditch and a mud wall, to secure it from sudden attacks. Here they rested for a few days.

Proceeding thence, the party passed through cool shades and lofty woods, which sheltered them effectually from the rays of the sun, so that their journey was less toilsome here than if they had travelled in England, during the heat of summer. Four of the Symérons, who were acquainted with the way, marched about a mile in advance of the troop, and scattered branches to direct the others. Then followed twelve Symérons: after these came the English, with their leader; and the remaining Symérons closed the rear.

On the eleventh of February, the party arrived at the top of a very high hill, on the summit of which grew a tree of astonishing size. In this tree the Symérons had cut steps for more easy ascent to the top. They invited Drake to ascend; and showed him, from thence, not only the sea whence he had come, but the great South

Sea, on which no English vessel had hitherto sailed. This prospect excited his natural ardour for the discovery of new countries. Drake raised his hands towards heaven, and implored a blessing upon the resolution which he then formed of sailing in an English ship on that sea.

Proceeding onward, they came, after two days, into an open, level country, where their march was somewhat impeded by the grass, which was of a peculiar kind, consisting of a stalk like that of wheat, and a blade, on which the oxen and other cattle fed, till it grew too high for them to reach. At length they arrived within view of Panama. Drake now advised his companions to conceal themselves in a wood near the road side. This they did, and one of the Symerons, in the habit of a negro of Panama, was sent into the town to ascertain when the mules bearing the treasure were to set out. The messenger was so well qualified for this undertaking, and so industrious in the prosecution of it, that he soon returned, with the tidings that the treasurer would commence his journey that night with eight mules laden with gold, and one with jewels.

Having received this welcome intelligence, Drake and his party immediately proceeded towards the first town, on the way to Nombre de Dios. He then ordered the men to lie down in the long grass about fifty paces from the road, half on one side and half on the other; and at such a distance that, at the same moment, one company might seize the foremost mule, and the other the hindmost, and thus the whole be secured.

The party had lain about an hour in this place, when they began to hear the bells of mules coming each way. Orders were immediately given that the droves which passed towards Panama should be permitted to proceed without molestation, because they contained nothing of value, and that those only should be intercepted which were travelling from thence. A positive direction was also given that none should rise till they heard a signal

either from Drake or the Symeron chief. Notwithstanding this, one of the Englishmen, somewhat in a state of intoxication, had prevailed with a Symeron to creep with him close to the road side, that they might signalize themselves by seizing the first mule. The Englishman heard the trampling of a horse, and, though no signal was given, he darted from his hiding-place, and sprung at the horse. This escaped him. The rider galloped into Pamama, alarmed the inhabitants with intelligence that an enemy was in ambush to intercept the treasure ; and thus only two of the mules laden with silver were taken.

This was a mortifying disappointment ; but there was no time to be spent in complaint. The country was alarmed, and Drake was aware that the whole force of the Spaniards would be summoned to overwhelm him. No alternative was left but that of precipitate retreat. He had no fortress to retire to, and every passable way through the country was better known to the Spaniards than to himself. This was an occasion that demanded all the qualities of a hero ; an intrepidity never to be shaken, and a judgment never to be perplexed. He immediately considered the circumstances of his situation ; and found that it afforded him only the choice of marching back by the same way through which he came, or of forcing his passage to Venta Cruz. He was induced to choose the latter, as he should then have nothing to fear but from open attack and expected enemies ; there being few woods to afford opportunities for ambush. Pedro, the leader of the Symerons, declared his resolution to follow him, and that no difficulties of the journey should induce him or his men to separate from and forsake him.

They arrived in safety at Venta Cruz ; and, small as their number was, they actually surprised and took possession of that town, with the loss of only one man. Some plunder was taken ; and the whole of it was given by Drake to the Symerons, as a reward for their aid and fidelity. He treated the inhabitants with great clemency,

himself going to the Spanish ladies, to assure them that no injuries should be offered them ; so inseparable is humanity from true courage.

Having thus broken the spirits, and scattered the forces of the Spaniards, he pursued his march, without any apprehension of danger, yet with great speed ; and after an absence of twenty days he again joined his companions, on board his ship, on the twenty-third of February.

*Mr. Allen.*—This must certainly have been a great disappointment, but Drake was not discouraged by it. He turned his thoughts to new projects ; and immediately employed himself in schemes to repair his past miscarriages.

*Edmund.*—He soon afterwards took a Spanish frigate, the pilot of which informed him that there was, in one of the adjacent harbours, a ship richly freighted with gold ; and he conducted the English to the place.

*Frederic.*—But here was another source of disappointment ; no sooner had Drake entered the mouth of the harbour than he was discovered, the whole coast was alarmed, and himself and his crew were obliged to return without success.

*Louisa.*—He appears to have been subject to incessant mortification. What was his next procedure ?

*Frederic.*—In company with the Symérons, and a party of Frenchmen, whom he had permitted to join him, having landed at some distance from Nombre de Dios, he marched unobserved through the woods towards that place, in the hope of being able to surprise a large convoy of treasure mules that were expected there from Panama. After a laborious march of more than seven leagues, they arrived in the night at a spot which the mules were expected to pass. In a short time they perceived the approach of the mules, in three droves, consisting in the whole of more than a hundred, and each of them loaded with three hundred pounds weight of silver. They now no longer doubted that their labours would be amply rewarded. After a short combat, in which the

French captain and one of the Symérons were wounded, the whole treasure was taken.

*Louisa*.—At last, then, they were successful.

*Frederic*.—Do not form too hasty a judgment. It has not perhaps occurred to you that silver is a heavy metal ; that they were not far from an enemy's settlement, on foot, and several leagues from the ships.

*Louisa*.—Indeed, I did not think of these impediments ; but proceed in your narration.

*Frederic*.—It was evident that, on this occasion, they could carry but a small portion of the treasure away with them. The rest, after great labour, they contrived to hide in shallow waters, and in holes which they dug in the ground ; and they then prepared for their return to the ships till a more convenient opportunity should occur of bringing this part of the treasure off. The French captain was so much disabled by his wounds, that they were compelled to leave him behind. Another Frenchman was missed from their company, who, upon inquiry, was known to have been intoxicated at the time, and was supposed to have lost himself in the woods.

After a few days had elapsed, Drake sent a party of English and Symérons, to bring away the hidden treasure. On their arrival at the spot, these men learnt that the intoxicated Frenchman had fallen into the hands of the Spaniards, and, by torture, had been compelled to confess where the plunder had been concealed ; that, on this information, two thousand Spaniards had been employed to dig up the whole surface of the country for two miles round ; and all that the party was able to recover, were thirteen bars of silver, and a small quantity of gold.

*Lady Irwin*.—The intoxication of his followers might be almost imagined a fatality attending Drake's expeditions. His incessant disappointments would certainly appear extraordinary, did we not know to how many sources of disappointment he was liable from the very nature of his enterprises.

*Frederic.*—Subsequently to the adventure that I have just recited, Drake took a few Spanish vessels laden with merchandize and provisions; and having liberally rewarded the Symerons, he determined to return to England.

*Mr. Allen.*—An anecdote must not in this place be omitted, which is strongly characteristic both of the gratitude of the leader of these faithful Indians, and of the inflexible integrity of Drake. Pedro, their captain, having been presented by Drake with a valuable cutlass, would not consent to take it, without making him some recompense, and he consequently gave him four large wedges of gold. Drake accepted these, but refused to take them to his own use. He threw them into the common stock, saying, he thought it but just that such as bore the charge of so uncertain a voyage upon his credit, should share the advantages which that voyage produced. Thus was this great man equally superior to avarice and to fear; whatever dangers he might encounter in quest of gold, he thought it not so valuable as to be obtained by artifice or dishonesty.

*Frederic.*—Having secured a considerable booty, he embarked his men, bore away for England, and arrived at Plymouth on the ninth of August, 1573.

You will recollect that Drake, in his expedition across the Isthmus of Panama, had had a view of the South Sea, and had formed a resolution, if possible, of sailing upon it. He did not suffer himself to be diverted from this design by the prospect of any difficulties that might obstruct the attempt, or any dangers that might attend the execution of it. He laid his project before Queen Elizabeth, and the privy council.

*Edmund.*—He did so; and had he alone been heard, he would, no doubt, have been enabled immediately to have realized his project. But, like Columbus at the court of Spain, he was opposed at the English court by the men then in power, who treated the whole scheme as rash and useless.

*Frederic.*—This opposition caused a delay of nearly



four years ; but at last Drake obtained, from the queen, a commission constituting him captain-general of a fleet of five ships, of which the Pelican, commanded by himself, was a vessel of a hundred tons burthen. The ships were equipped partly by himself, and partly by other adventurers ; manned with a hundred and sixty-four stout sailors ; and furnished with such provisions as were judged necessary for the long voyage in which he was engaged. He took out with him an abundant store of such articles as he thought would be useful in barter or exchange ; and even engaged a band of musicians to accompany him, judging that nothing would more tend to excite the admiration of savage and uncivilized people than these.

#### NARRATIVE OF DRAKE'S VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

WITH his squadron of five ships Drake sailed from Plymouth, on the thirteenth of December, 1577. Nothing of importance occurred in the voyage across the ocean ; and, on the fifth of April, 1578, he arrived within sight of Brazil. Proceeding southward, he passed the mouth of the river La Plata, and afterwards entered a harbour which, from the great number of seals that the crews of the different ships killed upon the shore, he named Seal Bay.

There were in this bay several islands ; and the captain being ashore on one of them, the natives came around him, dancing and skipping in a friendly manner ; and willingly bartered provisions for knives, and toys of different kinds. They were a stout and comely people. Their faces and bodies were painted with various kinds of figures, particularly of the sun and moon, the objects of their adoration ; and their only apparel was a covering of skin, with the fur on, wrapped round their waists, and a wreath of feathers round their heads. Each man had a bow, about an ell long, and two arrows. They seemed to have some notion of military discipline ; and

they gave sufficient proof of their agility, by stealing even the captain's hat from his head.

Sailing from Seal Bay, the squadron anchored in port St. Julian, on the twentieth of June. Here, after they had continued about two months, making the necessary preparations for passing the Straits of Magellan in safety, Drake called a court martial in a desert island, lying in the bay. When the court was assembled, he exhibited to them his commission; by which he was invested with the power of life and death. The queen had used this remarkable expression to him at their interview previously to his departure: "We do account that he, Drake, who strikes at thee, does strike at us." He explained to the officers of the court his reason for having assembled them; and proceeded to charge Captain John Doughty, who had been second in command during the voyage, with the crime of having plotted to murder him, and to ruin the enterprise. He was found guilty, and condemned to die. Drake gave him the choice of three things: to be beheaded on the island where they then were; to be set on shore on the main land; or to be sent home to abide the justice of his country. Captain Doughty chose the first, and was executed accordingly.

After this the squadron proceeded on its voyage towards the Straits of Magellan. Two of the smallest vessels having been broken up and turned adrift, as no longer of use, the three remaining ships entered the straits on the twenty-first of August, 1578. They had to struggle with contrary winds and various dangers in consequence of the intricacy of the passage. In the first night, the seamen discovered an island and a burning mountain. A few days afterwards they fell in with three more islands, to which Drake gave names; and on the largest of which they found such a prodigious number of the sea birds called penguins, that they killed more than three thousand in less than a day; knocking them down with clubs as they ran about upon the shore.

From these islands to the South Sea, the strait is, in various parts, so narrow and crooked, that, by the interposition of headlands, the passage sometimes seems closed up. The land rises on both sides into innumerable mountains, the tops of which were then covered with snow; but the valleys appeared green, fertile, and pleasant.

Notwithstanding all these difficulties, the weather had, on the whole, been so favourable, that they reached the western extremity of the straits, and entered the Great South Sea, in somewhat more than a fortnight. But on the ensuing day a storm so tremendous arose, that they had little hope of being able to survive it. Nor was its fury more dreadful than its continuance; for it lasted, with little intermission, for fifty-two days. During this time the ships were incessantly tossed about on the surface of the ocean, without a single sail set, amidst scattered rocks and unknown islands. During this storm, two of the vessels, the *Marigold* and *Elizabeth*, were separated; and the *Pelican*, the admiral's ship, was driven many leagues south of the extreme point of South America.

In his return northward, Drake discovered two islands, which he named *Elizabethides*, in honour of his queen. These were so well stocked with fowls of different kinds, that he found them an useful sea-store for his ship. Leaving these islands he sailed along the western coast of America, till he came to the harbour of Valparaiso. Here he took a Spanish merchant vessel, in which he found a quantity of pure gold, that, in value, was estimated to be worth more than thirty-seven thousand Spanish ducats. Directing his course now towards Lima, he annoyed the Spaniards by taking and destroying several of their ships, and seizing rich booties from various places on the shore. In one instance a party of his men, having landed in a port of Peru, named *Tarapaca*, saw a Spaniard asleep on the shore, with eighteen bars of silver, worth about four thousand ducats, lying by him; these they carried away without disturbing the man's

repose. Not far from the same place they met a Spaniard and an Indian driving eight vicunas, or Peruvian sheep, the beasts of burthen of this country. Each sheep had two leathern bags, containing about a hundred weight of silver. The men seized the whole of this treasure, and conveyed it on board the ship. After having obtained similar plunder in other places, Drake, about the middle of February, 1579, arrived at Callao, the port of Lima. Here he received intelligence of a valuable ship that had sailed, not long before, for Païta. He immediately went in pursuit of her ; but, on his arrival at Païta, she had proceeded northward for Panama. He continued the pursuit, and, during his course, took another ship ; which, besides other booty, yielded about eighty pounds weight of gold, together with a large golden crucifix, richly adorned with emeralds. Not long after this he came within sight of the Cacafuego, the ship of which he was in pursuit ; and after three shots, which carried away one of her masts, he boarded and took her. This ship was as richly laden as she had been reported. She contained thirteen chests full of dollars, eighty pounds weight of gold, a considerable quantity of jewels, and twenty-six tons weight of silver in bars.

Having taken several other vessels, and plundered two or three of the Spanish towns on the coast of America, Drake began to deliberate on the necessity of returning home. He was, however, in some difficulty respecting the course he ought to steer. He had now only one vessel, and therefore dared not attempt a re-passage of the Straits of Magellan, lest the Spaniards should oppose him with a force greatly superior to his own. His determination, at last, was to follow the course that the ships of Magalhaens had pursued, and return by the Moluccas, and the Cape of Good Hope. Endeavouring to put this design in execution, but being impeded by the weather, he found it necessary to steer northward, along the coast of America, for the purpose of obtaining a favourable wind.

He continued beating about in a slow progress till the beginning of June ; when, in north latitude forty-three degrees, he found the air excessively cold, and the severity of the weather almost intolerable. This induced him to return southward, about ten degrees. The crew being now in want of provisions, he entered a harbour on the coast of California, which has since been called the Bay of San Francisco.

Drake and his crew had much intercourse with the natives of the adjacent country, whose numerous huts were scattered along the shores of the bay. These people brought presents of feathers and net-work to him, together with several bags of tobacco, and provisions of various kinds. They were of dark complexion. The men were in general entirely naked ; and the women wore a kind of petticoat, formed of rushes dressed in the manner of hemp, and a deerskin on their shoulders. The English landed, and two ambassadors from the Californians were introduced to the admiral. They informed him that the king of the country would wait upon him, if he had only an assurance of friendship. This was immediately given, and a numerous train of Indians began to move in regular order towards the shore. In front came a person bearing the regal sceptre. On this were hung two long chains, and two crowns of net-work ingeniously formed of different coloured feathers. The chains were made of bones. Next to the sceptre-bearer followed the king, a good-looking, and somewhat majestic personage. He was surrounded by a guard of tall and martial Indians, all clad in skins. After these came several hundreds of the common people ; who, to make the finer appearance, had painted their faces and bodies of various colours. The whole company had their arms full of presents. When they approached the admiral, the sceptre-bearer made a speech, which lasted about half an hour. He ceased, and began to dance ; and immediately was joined by the king, his chiefs, and the whole people. They then all sat down ; and after some

preliminary compliments, the king took off his crown of feathers, and put it on the head of the admiral; giving him to understand that he was thereby invested with sovereign dignity. This absurd ceremony being ended, Drake, accompanied by some of his officers and men, set out on a journey into the interior of the country. Here they found extensive herds of large and fat deer: and immense numbers of small animals, which they called rabbits; and of the skins of which the robes of the king and his nobles were made. Before his departure Drake erected a monument with an inscription, to intimate his having discovered this country; and that, from its white cliffs bearing some resemblance to those of his own country, he had named it New Albion.

Sailing thence eastward, the navigators had no sight of land till the thirteenth of October, when they reached certain islands (probably some of the Carolines), which were situated in latitude eight degrees north. Here they saw several of the natives in their canoes. They had heavy pendent ornaments in their ears, and their teeth were perfectly black. They were a dishonest and treacherous people; in consequence of which, Drake determined to leave them, and continued his voyage.

On the fourteenth of November, he arrived at the Molucca Islands; and the next morning, anchored near the island of Ternate. On his officers landing, they were received by the king of the island with peculiar marks of favour. An abundance of provisions, rice, a kind of bread made of sago, poultry, and other articles were sent to the ship. The brother of the king also went on board, to request that Drake would come to the regal palace. This he refused to do, but sent some of his officers. The king went from the palace to meet them, dressed in cloth of gold, his hair woven into gold rings, a chain of gold upon his neck, and on his hands rings set with diamonds, and other jewels of great value. Over him was borne a rich canopy; and, near the chair of state on which he sat, when he returned to the palace, stood a



page holding a fan set with sapphires, to moderate the heat. Here he received the compliments of the English, and then honourably dismissed them. After a few days Drake left the island of Ternate, in quest of some convenient harbour, where he could refit his ship.

Five days subsequently to this, he found a very commodious one, in an uninhabited island, nearly covered with wood. Here he repaired his vessel, and refreshed his men, without either danger or interruption. Subsequently to his leaving this island, he encountered numerous difficulties, in consequence of adverse winds, and many dangerous shallows which he had to pass. When he thought himself clear of all land, and was sailing under a strong gale, on the ninth of January, 1580, after it was dark, he was surprised by a sudden shock of the vessel. The cause was immediately discovered. She had struck upon a rock, and was immovably fixed. The intrepidity of Drake was shaken, and even all his dexterity baffled. His piety, however, remained the same; and what he could not now promise himself from his own ability, he hoped from the assistance of Providence. The pump was tried, and happily the bottom of the vessel was found to be uninjured. The next attempt was to discover towards the sea some place to which the crew might fix their boat, and thence drag the ship into deep water. But, upon examination, it appeared that the rock on which she had struck rose perpendicularly from the water, and that there was no anchorage, nor any bottom to be found even beyond a boat's length from the vessel.

In the midst of this perplexity and distress, Drake directed that the sacrament should be administered, and that his men should thus be fortified with all the consolation that religion affords. He then persuaded them to lighten the vessel, by throwing into the sea part of the lading. This was cheerfully complied with, but without effect. At length, when their hopes had forsaken them, and no further efforts could be made, they were suddenly relieved by a change of the wind. The ship reeled into deep

water ; and a few minutes afterwards, to the surprise and joy of all on board, was found to have escaped, and even without any material injury.

They now continued their course till the eleventh of March, when they came to anchor before the island of Java. Here they stayed about a fortnight, and thence sailed in a direct course for the Cape of Good Hope, which they passed about the middle of June. They touched at Sierra Leone, on the western coast of Africa, where they obtained an abundant supply of provisions, wood and water, and arrived in safety at Plymouth, on Monday the twenty-sixth of September, 1580.

*Louisa*.—How long was Drake absent from England ?

*Frederic*.—Two years, ten months, and a few days. The voyage was a hazardous one, but those who returned were recompensed for their toils with great riches, and the universal applause of their countrymen.



*Edmund*.—Drake afterwards sailed up the river Thames to Deptford. Here, in the ensuing spring, Queen Elizabeth visited him on board his ship, and

conferred upon him the honour of knighthood. She also gave directions for the preservation of the vessel, that it might remain a monument in honour of himself and his country. After having for many years been viewed with wonder at Deptford, it was at last, through mere decay, broken up, and a chair made out of its planks was presented to the university of Oxford, where it is still preserved.

*Lady Irwin.*—It does not appear to me correct in Drake, at least in the outset of his career, to have attacked the vessels of a foreign nation, contrary to the faith of a solemn treaty of peace, notwithstanding the injuries he had received.

*Mr. Allen.*—His conduct at the time, though applauded by some, was on this very ground loudly decried by others. Some alleged that his exploit was not only honourable to himself, but to his country; and others, that he was in reality little better than a pirate. The fact was, that the English merchants had previously suffered much from the faithless practices of the Spaniards, and Drake had the protection of the English government in his proceedings. The circumstance of the queen having publicly congratulated him on his success on board his own ship was a sufficient proof of this. The whole of Drake's conduct relative to the Spaniards was founded on the equity of making reprisals.

*Frederic.*—As we shall have occasion to recur to the history of Sir Francis Drake in his character of a British admiral, I will conclude the account of him at present by stating, in a cursory manner, a few of the most important circumstances that have not hitherto been mentioned.

In September, 1585, he was appointed commander-in-chief of a fleet of twenty-five ships and pinnaces, which sailed from Plymouth to cruise against the Spaniards in the West Indies, and in the neighbourhood of the Spanish main, and after various successes he returned in the following year to England. His conduct

in the defeat of the Spanish Armada, in the year 1588, was extremely memorable; and in consequence of it, he was raised to the post of vice-admiral of England. In 1595, Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins were sent with a fleet to the West Indies. This expedition was only memorable for the destruction of the town of Nombre de Dios and the death of the two commanders, of whom Sir Francis died on the ninth of January, 1597, and his body was deposited in the sea, in a leaden coffin, with all the pomp of naval obsequies.

*Edmund.*—It has been reported by some that the ill success of this voyage hastened his death.

*Mr. Allen.*—It was so; but on what this conjecture is grounded does not appear. We may be allowed to hope, for the honour of so great a man, that it is without foundation; and that he, whom no series of success could betray to vanity or negligence, could have supported a change of fortune like this without impatience or dejection.



## SEVENTH EVENING.

*Mr. Allen.*—The voyages of Columbus, Magalhaens, Drake, and numerous other navigators, had satisfactorily ascertained that there was no passage by sea through the countries of America, betwixt the Gulf of Mexico and the Straits of Magellan. It was an important object to discover whether there existed such a passage as a shorter, and possibly a less difficult course to China and other countries of the east than that which ships are now obliged to take by the Cape of Good Hope. Numerous subsequent attempts were made to ascertain whether there existed any passage by sea through the northern parts of America. In the reign of Charles the First,

Captain THOMAS JAMES, an enterprising and meritorious officer, who had previously been employed in several northern voyages, was considered a person well adapted to attempt this long wished-for discovery.

In the year 1630, several wealthy merchants of Bristol united in fitting out a vessel for the purpose of accurately examining the whole northern coast of America. The command of this vessel, which was small, only of seventy tons burthen, but one of the strongest ships of her size that had ever been built, was given to Captain James. She was provisioned for eighteen months, and manned with only twenty-two seamen, but these were all excellent sailors.

I have not hitherto been able to discover any memoir of this brave officer, yet it may afford at least some amusement if I recite to you a short account of his adventurous voyage.

The young persons all united in requesting Mr. Allen to oblige them by so doing, and he proceeded as follows :

NARRATIVE OF THE VOYAGE OF CAPTAIN THOMAS JAMES,  
UNDERTAKEN FOR THE DISCOVERY OF A NORTH-WEST  
PASSAGE.

His stores having been all shipped, and the men on board, Captain James left Bristol in the month of April, 1631. After passing the southern coast of Ireland, he sailed in a west-north-westerly direction, and on the 4th of June discovered the coast of Greenland. Two days subsequently to this, his vessel was encompassed with ice, many immense pieces of which beat so violently against her that the captain was fearful she would have been staved and sunk. The boat that accompanied her was crushed to atoms. In one instance he was obliged to order the ship to be made fast to a great piece of the ice, and during a day and night to employ men incessantly in pushing off such masses of ice as floated against her ;

but in this labour all their poles were broken. The wind at length blew a perfect hurricane, and, though the broken ice on almost all sides rose higher than the decks, and the vessel was beaten about in a most alarming manner, she suffered no injury.

On the morning of the tenth of June these hardy adventurers passed some masses of ice that were as high as the topmast of their vessel, and left Cape Desolation, in Greenland, to the eastward. The weather was now so cold that at one time the sails and rigging were all frozen. On the twentieth the ship reached the southern point of the island of Resolution, at the entrance of Hudson's Strait; but she was several times carried round by the current and floating ice, and was in imminent danger of being crushed to pieces before she could be brought to anchor. It now began to snow heavily, and the wind blew a storm from the westward. This drove the ice from the sea into the harbour where the vessel was stationed, until it was choked up. For some time the ice seemed to be perfectly firm and immovable, but it floated out again at the ebb of the tide. The various dangers to which the vessel was exposed in this harbour, of being thrown against the rocks, crushed to pieces in the ice, and sunk, were so great that the captain almost gave up all hope of being able to save her. He describes the thundering noise of the masses of ice beating against each other, the rushing of the water, and the fury of the current to have been tremendous. After much difficulty and the most persevering exertions, however, she was navigated into a little cove or harbour, where, being made fast to the rocks, she was at length rendered tolerably secure.

Captain James landed on the island, but found that, although the summer was far advanced, the ponds were yet frozen. The ground was rocky and barren, and no traces of animals were visible in the snow, though it was evident from some hearths and remains of fire-wood which were seen, that human beings not long



before had visited the place. Captain James continued here two days, and then sailed westward; but the masses of ice were still almost impenetrable. They grated the sides of the vessel with such violence that it was feared they would burst through the planks. On looking out from the mast head scarcely an acre of open sea was visible: nothing was to be seen but a continued and irregular range of ice towering in different places to an immense height. The ship was thus surrounded till the twenty-seventh of June, when, by a gale from the south-east, the ice opened, and she was enabled to make some way.

Though exposed to incessant danger by the immense masses of ice which floated on the surface of the ocean, Captain James and his associates proceeded still westward, and entered Hudson's Strait about the beginning of July. On the fifteenth of that month they arrived betwixt Diggs Island and Nottingham Island, but the summer was so cold and unfavourable that it was now evident there would be no possibility of proceeding much further northward this year. About a fortnight afterwards they were so fast enclosed in the ice that, notwithstanding the ship had all her sails set, and it blew a strong breeze, she was immovable and as firmly fixed as if she had been in a dry dock. On this the captain and many of the men walked out of her to amuse themselves upon the ice. Several of the crew now began to murmur and to express great alarm, lest they should not be able either to proceed or return; and lest their provisions, which were beginning to fall short, would soon wholly fail. The captain encouraged them as well as he was able, and though he was aware their murmuring was not without reason, he affected to ridicule their fears. Among other contrivances to amuse them, he took a quantity of spirits upon the ice, and there drank the king's health: thus there was not a single man in the ship, although she was at that time under all her sails. This was the twenty-

eighth of July. On the thirtieth they made some little way through the ice, part of the crew heaving the vessel along with their shoulders, whilst others, at the



same time, broke off the corners of the ice with mallets and iron crows to clear the way. This labour was continued on the following day, and after much fatigue they got the ship into thirty-five fathom water. At this time they were in latitude fifty-eight degrees forty-five minutes north, and a few days afterwards they were in an open sea free from ice. The captain and his crew now joined in devout thanksgiving for their deliverance from the dangers to which they had been exposed.

A few days subsequently to this, whilst the ship was under sail, she struck upon some rocks that were concealed by the water, and received three such terrible blows, that the captain was fearful her masts would have been shivered to pieces, and he had no doubt that a hole had been beaten through her sides. But such was the

strength of her timbers that she received little injury, and, in a short time, was again out of danger.

On the twentieth of August, and in latitude fifty-seven degrees north, they again came within sight of land, part of the continent of North America, which the captain named New South Wales, in honour of Charles, Prince of Wales, afterwards King Charles the Second ; and on the third of September they passed a cape, to which he gave the name of Cape Henrietta Maria, after the Queen. In the ensuing evening they encountered such a tempest of thunder, snow, rain, and wind, as none of the crew had ever before been exposed to. The sea washed completely over the decks, and the vessel rolled so tremendously, that it was not without great difficulty all things could be kept fast in the hold, and betwixt the decks.

As the winter was now approaching, Captain James began to look out for some harbour where he and his companions could pass that cheerless season with as little discomfort, and in as much security, as possible. Landing, on the third of October, upon an island in the bay that has since been called James's Bay, he found the tracks of deer, and saw some wild fowl ; but not being able to discover a safe anchorage, he proceeded onward with the vessel, and two days afterwards moored the ship, in a place of tolerable security near the same island. It now snowed without intermission, and was so cold that the sails were frozen quite hard, and the cable was as thick with ice as a man's body.

Several men were sent ashore to cut wood for fuel, and they collected as much as, it was estimated, would last two or three months. It was found inconvenient, particularly for some of the crew who were sick, to continue entirely in the vessel ; a kind of house was, therefore, erected on shore, under the direction of the carpenter. In the mean time the captain and some of the men went into the woods to see whether they could discover any traces of human beings, that, in case they

found such, they might be on their guard against attack. None were found. The top-sails were now taken down from the vessel, thawed, and dried by great fires, and then folded up and secured from wet between the decks. The main-sail was carried on shore, to be used as a covering for the house. In about four days the house was ready, and a portion of the crew slept in it every night, armed with muskets to defend themselves in case of attack, and guarded by two buck-hounds, which had been brought from England for the hunting of deer. Such of the other rigging of the vessel as could be taken down, was now removed, and placed under the decks.

On the fourteenth of October six of the men set out with the dogs, in the hope of killing some deer, the tracks of which they had previously seen. They wandered more than twenty miles over the snow, and returned the next day with one small and lean animal; having passed a cold and miserable night in the woods. Others went out a few days afterwards, and to a still greater distance; these were not only unsuccessful, but they lost one of their companions, who, on attempting to cross a small frozen lake, fell in and was drowned. The captain consequently gave directions that hunting to such distances should be no more attempted.

The crew at first brought beer ashore from the ship; but this, even in their house, and close by the fire, was frozen and spoiled in one night. After this they drank water, which they obtained from a well that they sunk near the house. Their time was chiefly passed in setting traps and hunting for foxes and other animals, and in such occupations as were requisite for their own preservation.

The winter was now so far advanced, that the ship appeared, from the shore, like a piece of ice in the form of a ship. The snow was frozen on every part, and her decks and sides were covered with ice. The captain began to despair of ever again getting her off. Every

day the men were employed in beating the ice from the cables, and digging it out of the hawsers with a calking iron ; and in these operations the water would freeze on their clothes and hands so as very soon to render them unequal to almost any exertion.

The ship was found to beat so much, that the captain could devise no other means of preventing her from being shattered to pieces and destroyed, than by directing holes to be bored through her sides, and sinking her in shallow water ; where, in the ensuing spring, he might have a chance of again raising her. This was a fearful expedient ; but, after all the provisions and requisites for use on shore had been taken out of her, it was adopted ; although it was the general opinion of the crew that she could never be floated again. They, however, had so strong an attachment for their captain, and so much confidence in him, that, even in the midst of despair, they obeyed implicitly all his commands. With true christian confidence, he exhorted them not to be dismayed. “ If,” said he, “ we end our days here, we are as near heaven as in England ; and we are much bound to God Almighty, for having given us so large a time for repentance, and having thus, as it were, daily called upon us to prepare our souls for a better life in heaven. He does not, in the mean time, deny that we may use all proper means to save and prolong our lives ; and in my judgment we are not so far past hope of returning to our native country, but that I see a fair way by which we may effect it.” He then said that there was timber enough in the island for them to build a pinnace or large boat, by which they might endeavour to effect their escape, in case their vessel should be destroyed. This was on the thirtieth of November.

The sufferings and the hardships which these brave men encountered for many successive months, it is impossible to describe. Happily, they had a tolerable store of provisions from their ship, and had not to depend

upon the precarious subsistence to be obtained by hunting. Their liquids of every kind, wine, vinegar, oil, &c. were all frozen so hard, that they were obliged to cut them with hatchets, and then melt them over the fire for use.

In the beginning of January the whole surface of the adjacent sea was so entirely frozen, that no water whatever was to be seen. Some of the men were obliged to be out of doors a considerable part of the day, in fetching timber and in other necessary employments. Their shoes were all destroyed, except some that had been sunk in the ship, and which were now, of course, inaccessible. They were, consequently, reduced to the necessity of binding up their feet, as well as they could, in pieces of cloth. Their noses, cheeks, and hands were sometimes frozen in blisters, which were as white as paper; and blisters as large as walnuts rose on different parts of their skin. Their mouths became sore, and their teeth loose.

Timber was cut down, according to the directions of the captain, and the carpenter and crew worked hard at the pinnace, till nearly the end of March, when the carpenter became so weak and ill, that it was necessary to lead him to his labour.

Though they were in the midst of a wood, yet when their fuel began to fail, they had great difficulty in obtaining more. Almost all the axes had been broken in felling timber for the pinnace, and it was peculiarly requisite that care should be taken of such cutting implements as remained, lest there should be none left for finishing it. And, in felling the timber now, the trees were so hard frozen, that it was first requisite to light large fires round such as were to be cut, in order to thaw the wood before the axes could make any impression upon them.

During all this season of distress, Captain James and his crew never omitted to perform their religious duties. They particularly solemnized Easter day, the twenty-sixth of April, 1632; and it was on this day, whilst



they were sitting round their fire, that the captain proposed to attempt, on the first opening of the warm weather, to clear the ship of ice. This was considered by some of the crew impossible ; because they believed her to be filled with one solid mass of ice. The attempt, however, was resolved upon ; and the question was as to the implements with which it was to be made. These were brought in to review, and were only two iron bars (one of which was broken), and four broken shovels—apparently very ineffectual instruments for such a labour.

The time passed miserably and slowly on till the sixteenth of May, when they had a comfortable and sunny day. Some efforts were this day made to clear the decks of snow. From this period the vessel began to occupy much of the attention of the captain and his crew. The great cabin was found to be free both from ice and water, and a fire was lighted to clear and dry it. One of the anchors, which was supposed to have been lost, they found under the ice, and recovered. The rudder, which had been torn off by the ice, they were not able to find. By the twenty-fourth of May, they had laboured so hard in clearing the vessel, that they came to a cask, and could perceive that there was some water in the hold. They pierced the cask, and found it full of good beer ; which was a cause of great joy to them.

Their next object was to dig through the ice on the outside of the vessel, to the holes that had been cut for the purpose of sinking her. They succeeded in this operation ; and, through the lowest of these, a considerable quantity of water flowed out. The holes were then prevented from admitting any more water, by having strong boards nailed on the outside. Five days afterwards the weather became much warmer than it had been. The water in the hold of the vessel tended to thaw the ice ; and, by means of pumps, it was gradually cleared. Several butts of beer, one of cyder, and another of wine, were found perfectly sound and good ; as well as many barrels of salt beef and pork. A considerable

store of shoes and clothing was now also found. These, when dried, were peculiarly acceptable. But it was a subject of sincere rejoicing, that on examination of the vessel, no defect could be perceived in her ; and sanguine hopes began to be entertained that she might still prove capable of performing the remainder of the voyage. Not long after this, the rudder was discovered and got up from beneath the ice.

The carpenter now died. He had been a man beloved by the whole crew, and, with the most exemplary patience, had endured a long illness, in the course of which, with great exertion, he had completed all the most difficult parts of the pinnace. Thus, although he was deeply lamented by his comrades, the loss of him was not so severely felt, as it might otherwise have been. At this time nearly the whole of the crew were disabled, by illness, from working ; nor did any of them recover until after the commencement of the warm weather.

From the elevated parts of the land, the open water was first seen on the nineteenth of June. Four days afterwards the provisions and other articles that were ashore were carried on board. A cross was next erected : the king and queen's picture were tied to the top of it ; and the island was named Charlton island. The rigging of the ship was now set. On the thirtieth the sea was clear of ice ; and on the second of July, after the captain and his crew had all devoutly paid thanksgiving to the Almighty for their providential deliverance, they weighed anchor, and proceeded on their voyage.

Still, however, though in the open sea, they suffered great inconvenience from the beating of the floating ice against the ship. On the twenty-second of July, they again passed Cape Henrietta Maria. The ship had now become so leaky, that for some time, it was found difficult to keep her clear of water by the pumps. After almost incredible exertions, they made their way northward, according to their estimate, as far as sixty-nine degrees thirty-five minutes, when at length they came

to an impenetrable mass of ice. It was the opinion of the whole crew, that in the present condition of the ship, the autumn now fast approaching, it would not only be imprudent, but wholly impracticable, to make any further attempt to discover the hoped-for passage of the sea to the north-west. The captain, therefore, with a sorrowful heart, consented to relinquish his object : and, on the twenty-sixth of August, determined on returning to England. In his passage homeward the vessel encountered many difficulties from contrary winds and stormy weather ; but, at length, safely arrived at the mouth of the Severn, on the twenty-second of October, 1632.

*Louisa*.—I never read of hardships and deprivations more distressing than those that were sustained by Captain James and his crew.

*Lady Irwin*.—As a narrative of adventures, and an illustration of the patient endurance of British seamen, in the midst of apparently insurmountable difficulties, the voyage of this officer is very interesting. But his discoveries do not appear to have been of any great importance.

*Mr. Allen*.—Nearly all the discovery that he can boast is of a negative description. His work is important, not so much on account of what he did, as of what he did not discover. He was sent out, as I have said, to ascertain whether there was or was not a passage by sea along the north-west parts of America ; and his book renders it evident that, at least, there can be no practicable passage, no passage which can be useful in navigation. Indeed Captain James imagined that he had been able to advance unanswerable arguments against the existence of such a passage at all.

*Frederic*.—To what distance north did he sail ?

*Mr. Allen*.—I have stated ; as far as sixty-nine degrees thirty-five minutes of north latitude.

*Frederic*.—Last summer, 1817, it was related, in the

public prints, that several Greenland ships had penetrated to a much greater distance than this, without discovering any of those immense impeding masses of ice, from which the ship commanded by Captain James encountered so much difficulty.

*Sir Charles.*—The north Atlantic is said to have been more free from ice last summer than has been known for many centuries. But Captain James was peculiarly unfortunate, in having had to encounter the rigours of an unusually inclement season. It is said that the ships employed in the Greenland whale-fishery seldom experience any inconvenience from the ice until they have advanced to the distance of three or four degrees of latitude north of the sea, in which he found it to be impenetrable. Captain Phipps, who sailed on a similar enterprise in 1773, reached nearly the latitude of eighty, before he saw any ice; and he seems to have imagined it practicable to navigate even as far as the north pole.

*Lady Irwin.*—On looking at the map, I find that Charlton Island, where Captain James wintered, and near which the whole sea was at one time a mass of ice, is situated in a latitude but little further north than that of London. Is not this very extraordinary?

*Mr. Allen.*—The cause of the cold of that part of the world, where he wintered, being so much greater than in Europe, has been satisfactorily accounted for. The prevailing winds, for seven months in the twelve, blow from the north-east and north-west. These winds pass over high mountains, the tops of which are perpetually covered with snow, or over the polar ice of the sea. The consequence is, that they are so perpetually chilled as to occasion every year nine months of frost and snow; and almost insufferable cold from October to the beginning of May.

*Lady Irwin.*—This explanation appears sufficiently satisfactory.

*Louisa.*—I am really astonished at the confidence and attachment of Captain James's men. I fear, had I been

one of them, I should have been dreadfully alarmed, if, my shoes being worn out, I should have been obliged to wrap my feet in pieces of cloth. And, when I heard the captain order the carpenter to bore holes through the sides of the ship to sink it, particularly in a climate so inhospitable as that of Charlton Island, I am inclined to think I should have lost all my confidence in him.

*Mr. Allen.*—The confidence of Captain James's people in his talents and experience, and their mutual confidence in Providence, are very exemplary. In all their difficulties they appear to have been resigned to the Divine will, and their religious duties seem to have been invariably and devoutly performed. They exerted themselves to the utmost in that labour which was requisite for their subsistence ; and from the performance of these duties they derived a comfort and satisfaction of which, without them, the human heart is wholly unsusceptible.



## EIGHTH EVENING.

THIS evening Frederic Montagu proposed to speak of another of the English circumnavigators, Captain WILLIAM DAMPIER, a native of East Coker, in the county of Somerset. He said that he was born in the year 1652 ; and that, having lost his father when very young, he was sent to sea, first on a voyage to France, and afterwards to Newfoundland. In the latter voyage the extreme severity of the climate was either so disagreeable to his feelings, or so prejudicial to his health, that he determined never to sail into that part of the world again ; and was almost resolved never again even to go to sea. But he has himself said, that the proposal of a warm voyage and a long one, both of which he had always desired, induced him to change his mind.

*Sir Charles.*—What was his situation during this voyage? and to what part of the world did he sail?

*Frederic.*—He entered himself as a common sailor, on board an outward-bound Indiaman, and went to the East Indies. Soon after his return to England, a war broke out with the Dutch. During the first part of this war, he resided with his brother in Somersetshire, but growing weary of living on land, he entered the royal navy, and served under Sir Edward Spragge. At the termination of the Dutch war he was not more than twenty-two years of age. An offer was shortly afterwards made to him of the management of a plantation in Jamaica. This he accepted; and he went thither in the spring of 1674. But neither the nature of the employment, nor the terms of living so long on shore, were suitable to his disposition.

*Edmund.*—He therefore returned to sea, and engaged himself, in a subordinate capacity, on board a vessel which sailed in August, 1675, from Port Royal, Jamaica, to the bay of Campeachy, as an adventurer, in the logwood trade.

*Louisa.*—What kind of trade is that, Edmund?

*Edmund.*—The shores of the Bay of Campeachy, and some other parts of America, abound in various kinds of trees, amongst which is the logwood-tree. The wood of this tree, when cut into small pieces, is in great request by dyers; and the procuring, and exporting of logwood to different parts of Europe, even at the present day, employs a great number of men and vessels. The vessel in which Dampier sailed, was manned for the cutting and carriage of this kind of wood; and the voyage, on the whole, proved a successful one.

*Frederic.*—This success induced him to enter into a second speculation, of a similar kind. With the money he had realized he purchased axes, saws, a tent to sleep in, a gun, and abundance of ammunition. He took his passage on board a vessel from Jamaica for the bay of Campeachy; and arrived at Trist, in that bay, towards



the latter end of February, 1676. He there found several persons, who were engaged in the same trade ; and who partly supported themselves by cutting logwood, partly by hunting, and partly by plunder.

*Louisa.*—I wish you would inform me, somewhat more particularly, respecting the nature of their employment.

*Frederic.*—I will with pleasure do so. As the logwood-tree grows on low and wet land, near the sea, the persons employed in cutting it, are generally under the necessity of building huts to reside in, close to the side of the creeks. For their bedding, they form a wooden frame, at the height of about three feet and a half above the ground. Another, and somewhat similar frame is raised, and covered with earth, as a table to dress their food upon ; and each man has a third, for a chair, to sit upon when he eats.

*Louisa.*—What can be the use of such singular kind of furniture ?

*Frederic.*—It is necessary to have their furniture thus elevated, because during the wet season of the year, the ground on which the logwood grows is so overflowed, that the men often have to step from their beds two feet deep into water.

*Louisa.*—But if such be the case only during the wet season, why do not the logwood cutters defer their business till the weather is dry ?

*Frederic.*—Because the trees are not then in a proper state to be cut.

*Sir Charles.*—The regulations of the logwood cutters formerly were somewhat curious.

*Frederic.*—They were so, sir. The men were accustomed to work hard at the logwood trees all the week, till Saturday ; and to employ that day in hunting and killing wild cattle. The exertions on this day were sufficient for providing themselves with beef for the ensuing week. On their return from these hunting excursions, they generally made a very singular and grotesque appearance.

When they had killed a buffalo, they cut it into quarters, and, taking out all the bones, each of four men made a hole through the middle of his quarter, just large enough for his head to pass through. He then put it on, as if it had been a cloak, and returned home ; his clothes of course besmeared with blood, and himself not looking like a human being.

*Lady Irwin.*—What was Dampier's particular situation among the logwood cutters ?

*Frederic.*—He united himself with a company of six ; and his station was at first little better than that of a servant. On the first Saturday after his engagement the master of the company sent him to drive buffaloes out of the swamps into the woods, where some men were concealed to shoot them. In the following week, however, thinking it would be more honourable to try his own skill in shooting, than merely to drive the animals for the sport of others, he sallied forth alone into the woods, and soon lost himself. He endeavoured to find his way back, but at sun-set was a considerable distance from his residence. Being overtaken by the night, he was compelled to lie on the ground, but was unable to sleep from excessive anxiety, and from the torment he suffered by being bitten, in all the exposed parts of his body, by hundreds of musquitoes, a large kind of gnat, which swarm in the wet countries of hot climates. At day-break he pursued what he thought was his proper course, and soon had the satisfaction of perceiving a hat stuck upon a pole. This had been placed there by his comrades to mark the place of their dwelling. Shortly afterwards he joined them, and was sincerely congratulated on his escape ; as many persons who had lost their way in the woods before him, had never afterwards been heard of.

Some of the comrades of Dampier became tired of the laborious life they led ; and, instead of it, resolved to confine themselves to the killing of buffaloes, for the sake of their hides. Dampier, however, soon perceived

that, if he meant to obtain any success he must not depend upon these men. He therefore determined to pursue, without intermission, the labour of cutting logwood by himself. This he did for some time, till he found his legs affected in various parts by a most distressing malady.

*Louisa*.—What was that, Frederic?

*Frederic*.—He did not himself at first know what was the matter with him. But, on attentively examining the sores that had been produced in different parts of his legs, he saw in each the head of a little worm. On consulting with his comrades, he was told to apply to every wound a certain kind of plaister. This he did, and each of the worms (somewhat thicker than a thread), was the next day found extended about an inch beyond the orifice of the wound. By the direction of his comrades, he rolled these upon little sticks; and every succeeding morning and evening, he was enabled to pull out about two inches more. This operation he continued till he had drawn out a length of nearly two feet of each worm. Still, however, he was greatly incommoded; and at last, on consulting a negro of the country, he was supplied with a kind of powder, by which, on applying it to the sores, he was enabled to eradicate at once the whole of them.

*Mr. Allen*.—The worms of which Frederic has spoken are very extraordinary ones. They are well known both in the East and West Indies, where they have the name of Guinea-worm. When very minute in size, they enter the naked feet of persons who are exposed to the weather, and they are sometimes very difficult to be eradicated.

*Edmund*.—Scarcely was Dampier relieved from this malady than he experienced a very serious misfortune. A dreadful and destructive hurricane blew down all the huts of the logwood cutters except one. In that which remained, Dampier and his companions took shelter; but not until they had propped it with strong posts driven into the ground, and had thrown ropes over the ridge

to secure the roof. The hurricane was accompanied with a tremendous fall of rain ; and, in the course of two hours, the water in the creek near which they resided began to flow, so that next morning it was higher than it had ever been before. The storm continued all day, and during the following night, till about ten o'clock. It was in vain after this, to think of continuing the business of cutting logwood, or even of remaining where they were. Nearly all the trees in the neighbourhood had been blown down, and scattered on the ground, in such directions as to render the country nearly impassable. The highest land around them was under water ; most of their provisions were spoiled, and what were fit to eat, they had neither the means nor the opportunity of cooking. They had, therefore, no alternative but to leave the place. They consequently set off for an adjacent island, which, from the immense number of wild cattle it contained, was called Beef-island. Here they proposed for a little while to pass their time in hunting.

In this island Dampier, to use his own words, “ was surprised with an odd accident.” Passing, with some of his comrades, through a small savanna or swamp, he perceived a strong musky smell. This he knew to be occasioned by an alligator not far distant. Soon afterwards he stumbled over one, and fell down. He cried out for help ; but his comrades, fearful of being devoured by a creature of whose voracity they had heard very horrid accounts, instead of assisting him, ran away towards the woods. While he was on the ground the animal moved from its place, and Dampier when he arose stumbled over it a second time, and after that a third time ; but the alligator did him no injury.

*Louisa*.—It must, however, have very much frightened him.

*Lady Irwin*.—What befell him after the losses he had sustained ?

*Frederic*.—As he had not sufficient money to replace

the stock of provisions he had lost by the hurricane, he was, for a while, compelled to seek a subsistence with some privateers in the bay of Campeachy. But he had no sooner procured a sufficiency of provisions, than he joined the logwood cutters again, and continued in that trade for ten or twelve months. Having, in the course of this time, acquired considerable property, he resolved to return to England, with a view, as it has been said, to invest his property in land; and then of returning to Campeachy, to pursue the trade of logwood cutting again.

He consequently sailed from the bay in the month of April, 1678; and, having passed a short time in Jamaica, he arrived in England about the beginning of August following.

*Edmund.*—Dampier subsequently changed his project of logwood cutting, to engage with some other adventurers, in a predatory expedition against the Spaniards. This was towards the close of the year 1679. Their first attempt was an attack on the town of Porto Bello, on the Spanish main. In this they succeeded; and they afterwards resolved to march across the isthmus of Panama, on a daring enterprise to the coast of the South Sea.

*Lady Irwin.*—I suppose on some such design as that of Drake and the Symeron Indians, which has already been mentioned.

*Edmund.*—They had no fixed plan like Drake. Their number was betwixt three and four hundred; and they set out on the fifth of April, 1680, carrying with them provisions, and trinkets of various kinds, for the different tribes of Indians through whose country they should pass. In eighteen days they arrived within sight of the town of Panama. They proceeded to the south of this place, and having embarked in several canoes, and in other small craft furnished them by the Indians, they attempted to take the Spanish town of Puebla Nova, but were unsuccessful, and had many men killed. Their

next resolution was to direct their course towards the shores of Peru. In this part of their enterprise, which appears to have proved of little permanent benefit to them, they occupied nearly the remainder of the year.

In December they crossed over to the island of Juan Fernandez, where they spent the Christmas; and after which they returned northward. They attacked some of the Spanish settlements, but without success, and with so great a loss of men, that before they arrived at the isthmus, to re-pass it, their whole number was reduced to forty-seven.

*Louisa*.—They must surely have been much alarmed at attempting a re-passage of the isthmus, with so small a force.

*Edmund*.—It was a very desperate undertaking; but, having no alternative, they began their march in the afternoon of the first of May. Towards the evening of the second day, they met an Indian; this man, for a hatchet, agreed to conduct them to the house of another Indian, who was capable of directing them in their proper course. When they arrived at the habitation of the latter, he was not disposed either to give them advice or assistance: they even imagined that he seemed desirous of betraying them to the Spaniards. They used every endeavour, and had recourse to every means, to persuade him to assist them, but he perseveringly refused, till one of Dampier's companions took out of his bag a sky-coloured petticoat, and put it on the Indian's wife. She was so much delighted with this present, that she persuaded her husband to procure a conductor for them. He accordingly hired them an Indian, who, for a hatchet, went with them two days' journey further.

Their journey now began to be hazardous and fatiguing in the extreme. During the four days' march, they crossed one of the rivers thirty times. Dampier, in order to secure his journal, which he had always kept with great care and regularity, wherever he went, had provided himself, before he left the ship, with a large



piece of bamboo. This, which was hollow, he stopped at both ends, closing it in such manner with wax that no wet could penetrate into its interior, During the fifth day a serious accident befell the surgeon, Mr. Wager. By the explosion of some gunpowder his knee was so badly scorched, that he was unable to keep pace with his comrades, and did not join them again till the end of the journey. On the morning of the eighth day it was necessary to cross a river which was much swollen, and very deep. In this attempt one of the party was drowned, and none of them could have succeeded, had they not cut down a tree, which, falling across the stream, served them as a bridge.

Nothing further of importance occurred till the twentieth day of their expedition. On this day they came to the river Chepo, the last which they had to cross, that ran into the South Seas. By the current of the rivers running the other way, they now ascertained that they were approaching the object of their wishes, the bay from which they had taken their departure. On the twenty-third of May, they came to a stream, on the bank of which they procured canoes to carry them to the bay; and soon afterwards they arrived at it, after a journey, from one sea to the other, of twenty-three days; and along a distance, according to Dampier's computation, of a hundred and ten miles, over high mountains, across valleys, marshes, and woods, and among deep and dangerous rivers. Had they been able to land where they first proposed, it was imagined that they might, with ease, have accomplished their journey in three days.

*Louisa*.—What! have marched a hundred and ten miles in three days?

*Edmund*.—No, *Louisa*: had they not been deterred by the presence of a Spanish vessel, they would have passed up a river, by which their journey would have been much shortened. But, fearful of encountering a powerful enemy, they were compelled to land at a point which rendered the distance they had to travel much

greater than it would otherwise have been. Shortly after this they discovered a small fleet of English and French privateers, that was preparing to cruise against the Spaniards. Dampier offered his services, which were accepted; and he went on board one of the English ships. The fleet sailed, and was successful in making several valuable captures. After this, in conjunction with about twenty others, Dampier agreed to fit up one of the vessels that had been taken; and to sail, with their share of the plunder, to Virginia, in North America.

*Frederic.*—It was from this country that he subsequently performed a voyage by Cape Horn through the Great South Sea, the Indian Ocean, and Atlantic to England, and thus performed a circumnavigation of the globe. I am prepared to read to you an abstract of this voyage.

#### NARRATIVE OF DAMPIER'S VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

THAT portion of the voyage betwixt England and Virginia it will be requisite for me to omit, as it has been explained in the conversation which has just taken place.

Whilst Dampier was in Virginia he met with an old companion, Captain John Cook, who was fitting out a vessel to cruise against the Spaniards in the South Seas. He proposed to accompany him, and his proposal was instantly acceded to. They sailed from the harbour of Achamack in Virginia, on the twenty-third of August, 1683, in a direction towards the Cape de Verd islands. Thence they proceeded to the coast of Guinea; and afterwards, across the ocean, to the Straits of Magellan. They attempted to enter the Straits, but were driven by stress of weather considerably south of them, and were compelled to sail round Cape Horn.

Soon after they had entered the South Sea, they were joined by an English vessel, under the command of a

Captain Eaton ; and these vessels proceeded in company to the island of Juan Fernandez. In his excursion into the South Seas three years before, the vessel in which Dampier sailed was chased by three Spanish ships, and he had been obliged to leave a Mosquito Indian on this island. On his arrival now, Dampier was anxious to ascertain the fate of this man. As soon, therefore, as the ship was anchored, a canoe was sent off with another Mosquito Indian in it. He leaped ashore, and almost immediately afterwards saw and recognised his countryman. The surprise, tenderness, and affection expressed at this interview, were not to be described : and the joy of the apparently forsaken Indian at seeing again so many of his friends, was beyond all bounds. He imagined they had purposely come to fetch him.

Dampier was desirous of being informed respecting the incidents that had occurred to this man, during his residence on the island ; and he gave the following account :

When he was left, he said, he had with him his gun and a knife, a small horn of powder, and some shot. After the powder and shot were expended, he ingeniously contrived, by notching his knife, to saw the barrel of his gun into small pieces, and of these he made the heads of harpoons, spears, hooks, and a large knife. To form them he first heated the pieces in a fire, and then struck them with his gun-flint, and a piece of the barrel of his gun that he had hardened. The hot pieces of iron he hammered and bent by means of a stone : he sawed them with his jagged knife, and then ground them to an edge or point, according to the purposes for which they were required. With these instruments he contrived to procure such provisions as the island afforded, especially goats and fish. At first he was obliged to eat the flesh of seals, a kind of animals which he found very abundant on the shores of the island ; but, after he could catch fish, he entirely neglected seals,

except for the purpose of making fishing lines; which he did by cutting their skins into narrow slips. He had now little difficulty either in spearing goats or catching fish. As it was requisite to shelter himself from the inclemencies of the weather, he built a hut about half a mile from the sea. This he lined with goat-skins. His



couch, which was raised above the ground on sticks, was covered with similar skins. He had no clothes, and wore only a skin round his waist. The Spaniards knew such a person had been left on the island, and had frequently endeavoured to discover him, but he always contrived to elude their search. He had seen the ships in which Dampier and his friends approached the island before they came to anchor; and, believing them to be English, had killed three goats, which he had dressed with cabbage, to treat them with when they came ashore.

Dampier and his companions remained at Juan Fernandez sixteen days, and departed on the eighth of April, taking of course their friend the Mosquito Indian with them. Their first project was to attack the town of Truxillo, on the coast of South America. They approached the place, and made preparations for that purpose; but, finding it too strongly fortified, they judged it most prudent to retire. They were foiled in several similar projects, and were obliged to content themselves with making prize of a few small coasting vessels.

While they were in these seas, Captain Cook died,

and was succeeded in command by Mr. Edward Davis, his quarter-master. After this, Captain Davis and Captain Eaton resolved to separate. Dampier continued with the former; who soon afterwards was joined by a vessel called the *Cygnet*, from London, commanded by a Captain Swan.

By a Spanish packet-boat which they captured, they learnt that a valuable fleet of plate ships was expected soon to sail from Lima. They made every preparation to intercept some of these vessels; and, as it was known that they would call at Panama in their way, Captain Davis and Captain Swan, with three other vessels which they had armed and manned from their prizes, proceeded to the island of Tobago, in the bay of Panama. Here they anchored, sending out the other vessels to cruise for the plate ships.

While they were in this bay, an attempt was made by the Spaniards to destroy their vessels. A person, who pretended to be a merchant from Panama, came to Davis, and proposed to trade privately with him, if he would anchor nearer the shore. This was done; and after it was dark, a vessel was perceived sailing towards them. They imagined her to be the merchant's bark; but, some suspicion having been excited, she was called to, and ordered to anchor. She did not comply with this order, and a gun was fired. On this the crew left her, and soon afterwards she blew up; proving to be a fire-ship. She exploded so near Captain Davis's vessel, that to escape from the danger, he was obliged to cut his cable, and get under weigh as soon as possible. Captain Swan's vessel was attempted nearly at the same time, but in a different manner. Just before the ship exploded, a small float, apparently with a man upon it, was observed to be approaching. Suddenly the man dived and disappeared. Captain Swan taking the alarm, cut his cable and sailed from the spot. It was imagined that, if he had not been discovered, the man who was on the float would have fastened some combustible





matter about the rudder of the ship, and thus have burnt her.

At the island of Tobago they were joined by a strong party of seamen, who had crossed the isthmus of Panama. These they distributed in their vessels, which, in consequence, were well manned; and they had now no fearful apprehensions as to the result of an engagement with the Spanish fleet, though they knew it to be much more powerful than their own. At length they came within sight of it; but during the dark, by a skilful manœuvre of the Spanish commander, he obtained so great an advantage, that in the morning the adventurers found all their hopes frustrated, and they were glad themselves to escape in safety from that fleet, which, but a few hours before, they had hoped to have captured.

They took several coasting vessels, and burnt two of the towns on the coast, but obtained no plunder of importance. Davis and Swan now agreed to separate,



and Dampier accompanied the latter. They sailed to the coast of Mexico, where they arrived on the eleventh of February, 1687 ; and, shortly afterwards, they proceeded to Cape St. Lucas, in California, to careen and refit the vessel.

Captain Swan now proposed to his crew that they should sail across the Great Pacific Ocean to the East Indies. This, after considerable hesitation, was at last assented to ; but, on examining into the state of their provisions, it was discovered that they had not more than would last them for about sixty days. They were startled at this ; but, being encouraged by their captain, they were immediately put on short allowance, and cheerfully commenced their desperate enterprise.

In the first twenty days, they made great progress ; and the men, imagining their difficulties would soon terminate, began to complain of their allowance. The captain remonstrated to no purpose ; they insisted on its being increased ; the consequence was, that when he came within sight of the Ladrones Islands, they had not on board more provision than would have served them for about three days ; and they must have died of famine had their voyage been of much longer duration.

After having obtained at these islands a sufficiency to serve them for some days longer, they proceeded to Mindanao, one of the Philippines. Here they continued a considerable time, and were treated in a friendly manner by the inhabitants, who freely supplied all their wants, and even expressed a desire that they would continue with them. The crew, however, from want of employment, and neglect of discipline, became mutinous, and determined to sail without their captain. He was consequently left on shore ; and Dampier, being at that time on board the ship, was compelled to accompany them.

They cruised for some time on the eastern seas, but to little purpose ; and at last were driven, by contrary winds and tempestuous weather, on the coast of China.

After this they passed eastward of the Philippines, and arrived at New Holland on the fourth of January, 1688. During this voyage, Dampier had made several attempts to induce the crew to return to Mindanao, and take their captain on board ; but all these being to no purpose, it was his determination to leave the ship at the first convenient opportunity. Having continued in New Holland somewhat more than two months, during which time the crew had cleansed and refitted the vessel, they sailed northward ; and passing the island of Sumatra, they anchored on the fifth of May, in a bay on the north-west side of the largest of the Nicobar islands.

During their continuance here, Dampier made himself well acquainted with the dispositions, manners, and customs of the natives, and with their various articles of traffic ; and he thought, if he were left here, that he could establish, in this island, a profitable trade in ambergris. He proposed to himself to collect a quantity of this substance from the shore, where it was very abundant : and by means of it, not only to purchase his passage home in some European vessel, but to make a considerable profit by the sale of the remainder. This project he kept secret ; and, when the vessel was ready to sail, he requested that he might be set on shore, with his chest and bedding. His request was complied with. He was joined by a Mr. Hall, and a sailor whose name was Ambrose ; and they took up their abode together in one of the huts of the natives.

Dampier's plan of continuing on the island was soon abandoned ; for, on the day after the departure of the vessel, he and his comrades purchased a canoe from one of the inhabitants for an axe ; and in this, with four Malays and a Portuguese sailor, whom the commander of a vessel had put on shore afterwards, they resolved to proceed to Achen, the capital of a kingdom in the north-west part of the island of Sumatra.

Their boat was about the size and burthen of a London wherry, but deeper ; and she was so light, that

when empty, four men could either launch or haul her ashore. The mast was strong, the sail formed of a mat; and on each side were out-riggers made of strong poles lashed firmly together. The advantage of these was that, while they continued firm, the boat could not upset. Dampier was determined if possible to sail without them; but the boat had scarcely left the shore before she overset. He and his companions saved themselves by swimming; but their clothes and books being completely wetted, they were obliged to stay three days longer to dry them.

On the fifteenth of May, 1688, they finally left Nicobar island. In order to gain the advantage of the trade wind, they first rowed southward. On the morning of the second day, having rowed and sailed a considerable distance, as they thought, in a proper course, they anxiously hoped to have seen the island of Sumatra; and their surprise and chagrin cannot be described, when, on looking round, they found themselves still within sight of Nicobar. Their progress had been impeded by a circumstance of which they had not been aware—a strong current that, during the night, had set in a direction contrary to that in which they were desirous of proceeding.

In their frail bark they shortly afterwards encountered a tremendous storm. Although their sail was down, the poles of the out-riggers bent under the weight of the wind as if they would break; and if these had broken the boat must have been upset, and themselves inevitably lost. The waves likewise threatened every instant to overwhelm them. The ends of the boat, however, being extremely narrow, the man who steered received the whole force of the sea upon his back, and thus broke it, and kept it from coming so much into the boat as it otherwise must have done. Those hands that could be spared from navigating the boat, were incessantly employed in throwing out the water. The evening of this day was dismal in the extreme. The sky was covered with black clouds; the wind blew a hurricane; the sea

was roaring in white foam on all sides ; a dark night was coming on ; there was no land in sight to which they could steer for shelter ; and their little bark was in danger of being swallowed by every wave. Dampier in giving an account of this part of his voyage, says, that he " had been in many imminent dangers before now ; but that the worst of them all was but play-game in comparison with this." About ten o'clock it began to thunder, lighten, and rain. The wind now blew harder than before ; but in about half an hour it moderated, and the sea also abated somewhat its fury. About two o'clock there was another gust of wind, with thunder, lightning, and rain, which continued till day-light. The night had been dark, and the rain by which they were completely drenched, chilled them extremely. Never did despairing mariners long more earnestly for the dawning light than they. At length the day appeared, but the sky was still enveloped in black and threatening clouds. Having been obliged to direct their course before the wind, their joy may well be imagined when, about eight o'clock in the morning, one of the Malays descried an island, which he knew to be situated near the north-western extremity of Sumatra ; and, about five o'clock in the afternoon of the ensuing day, they reached the mouth of a river in Sumatra, about thirty-four leagues eastward of Achen.

The fatigues of their voyage had been so great, that they were all now extremely weak and ill. The inhabitants afforded them the most hospitable and humane attention that was possible ; and, after some days, conveyed them in a large boat to Achen. Three days after their arrival at this place, the Portuguese died ; and Ambrose, the English sailor, did not long survive him. Mr. Hall continued dangerously ill, and Dampier himself, though he had suffered the least, was still in a very precarious state.

When somewhat recovered, they were induced by the captain of an English trading vessel, to accompany him to Tonquin. Here the inquisitive mind of Dampier led

him, almost beyond his strength, to make many excursions, for the purpose of obtaining information respecting the country and the inhabitants. In one of these excursions, under the care of a Tonquinese guide, Dampier observed a small square wooden tower, and near it a quantity of meat set out on stalls, and a great number of men and boys assembled. He imagined it to be a butcher's market, and approached with an intention of purchasing something for his supper. His guide could give him no information respecting it, for he did not understand English, and Dampier was ignorant of the language of Tonquin. On approaching nearer to the stalls, he observed both fruits and meats, arranged in great order, and apart from each other. There were, in particular, a great number of fine oranges packed in baskets; and when he came to the meat he observed nothing but pork. As there was no piece sufficiently small for his use, he took hold of a quarter, and made signs to a person at the



stall, to cut him off a piece of two or three pounds weight. No sooner had he touched the pork, than he



was beset on all sides ; the populace assembled round him, struck him, and tore his clothes ; and one of them snatched off his hat and ran away with it. His guide endeavoured to appease them, and forcibly dragged him from the crowd. Some of the more violent followed to a considerable distance ; but Dampier, having at last recovered his hat, made his escape. When he returned to the ship, he learned that this was a funeral feast ; that the tower was a tomb prepared to be burnt ; and that the meat and fruits had been brought thither as a kind of sacred feast for the people of the country.

After having continued in different parts of the east for nearly two years longer, without any thing particularly worthy of notice occurring, Dampier sailed from Bencoolen, in Sumatra, for England, on the twenty-fifth of January, 1691, in a ship belonging to the East India Company. He had some difficulty in escaping from this place, in consequence of his having rendered himself useful in several particulars to the government there. He had permission to depart, but this permission was revoked ; and he at last made his escape by creeping through one of the port holes of the fort to the shore, where the ship's boat was in waiting to carry him on board.

In the beginning of April, he arrived at the Cape of Good Hope ; and on the sixteenth of September, 1691, the ship in which he had sailed, was anchored in the Downs.

The voyage of Dampier had been a long and perilous one ; and he returned to his country with few other effects than his journal and papers, and an Indian prince, whose body was painted or tattooed in a singular manner, and whom he had obtained in the east. Being in want of money, he sold his property in this prince to a man who carried him about through different parts of England, and exhibited him as a show.

*Louisa.*—I cannot imagine by what right Captain Dampier could have obtained such a property in any



person, as you have mentioned respecting this unfortunate prince.

*Frederic.*—The right was founded solely on power. The Indian and his mother were together in a canoe, when some fishers, belonging to Mindanao, seized, carried them off, and sold them as slaves. After they had been in the possession of the original purchaser about five years, he again sold them to an Englishman of the name of Moody, who subsequently gave them to Dampier. The mother died, and the son was brought to England. He died of the small-pox at Oxford, where he had been taken for exhibition.

*Louisa.*—The whole procedure appears to me a very iniquitous one. Nor, indeed, can I altogether much admire the character of Dampier. It is true that he sailed round the world, and made some important discoveries, but his voyage was a mere enterprise for plunder. He may merit the appellation of an experienced seaman, and a man perhaps of courage and perseverance; but his character falls infinitely below that of Drake, who, though engaged in somewhat similar enterprises, was a man of probity, humanity, and generosity.

*Edmund.*—The courage and presence of mind of Dampier, at least, you will allow, were sufficiently conspicuous on numerous occasions; particularly in requesting to be left on shore at Nicobar, his sailing thence in a little open boat, and his subsequent conduct in the navigation of this boat during the tremendous storm to which he was exposed.

*Frederic.*—You omit one part of his character which is deserving of note. Though, as you observe, almost solely engaged in predatory enterprises, his mind was at the same time, incessantly bent on obtaining knowledge. Even during all the inconveniences attendant on his excursion across the isthmus of Panama, he did not omit to keep a journal of his observations; which journal, as you will recollect, he secured in a piece of bamboo. His inquisitive disposition, in Tonquin, might

have proved fatal to him, had he not been rescued by his guide.

*Louisa*.—It was, however, a strange kind of blunder to mistake a funeral feast for a butcher's market. But I wish to be informed respecting the Mosquito Indian who was left on the island of Juan Fernandez, whether he was there before or after Alexander Selkirk, whose history I have read?

*Frederic*.—Near twenty years before. It is, however, not a little singular that when Selkirk was left there, Captain Dampier was present, in a subsequent excursion against the Spaniards in the South Sea. I propose to relate the story of Selkirk to-morrow, in a narrative of the voyage of Captain Rogers, by whom he was rescued.

*Louisa*.—I cannot imagine any situation more distressing than that of being left alone on an uninhabited island. Without a single human being for consolation or comfort; the fear of being destroyed by wild beasts; the dread of being unable to provide food for the support of life; and the horror of being unassisted in illness, and of dying in the midst of solitude, would, I think, soon terminate my existence.

*Frederic*.—And yet it is almost impossible to read the fiction of Robinson Crusoe, which had its origin in the history of Alexander Selkirk. without, in imagination, transferring ourselves to his luxuriant island, contemplating his situation as our own, and experiencing great delight in the various schemes and contrivances by which he was enabled apparently to pass his time in comfort.

*Sir Charles*.—But, Frederic, I must recall your attention to Captain Dampier. You are wandering from his history.

*Frederic*.—I will immediately proceed with the remaining particulars that have been recorded concerning him. Soon after his return to England, he published an account of his voyages, in two volumes. These volumes also comprise a discourse on the trade-winds, breezes,

storms, seasons of the year, tides, and currents of the torrid zone.

*Edmund.*—Dampier was subsequently appointed to the command of a small vessel, called the *Roebuck*, carrying twelve guns, manned with a crew of fifty men and boys, and provisioned for twenty months. This vessel was equipped for a voyage of discovery; but was old and infirm, and consequently very unfit for such a service. He, however, sailed in her, from the Downs, in the month of January, 1698—9; and in the beginning of August following arrived in Shark's Bay, New Holland. He sailed along the north coast of New Holland, making several discoveries, till the beginning of September; when he proceeded to the island of Timor, for the purpose of repairing his ship, and recovering his men, who had suffered dreadfully from the scurvy. Having accomplished these objects, Dampier left Timor, and sailed for the coast of New Guinea. Here he made several important discoveries, and particularly ascertained that what had before been considered the easternmost part of New Guinea, formed an island; and to this island Dampier gave the name of New Britain. He intended to have continued some time in these seas, but was prevented by the bad state of his ship, and the extreme unhealthiness of the crew. These circumstances, added to the unfavourable season of the year, determined him to proceed to Batavia, in his return to Europe. At Batavia he refitted his ship, and laid in a supply of provisions and water; and some time afterwards sailed for England. When he arrived within sight of the island of Ascension, the ship sprung a leak. This increased rapidly and violently; and the part where it seemed to be, was found so rotten, that it broke like dirt. Means were consequently taken, in case the vessel gave indications of sinking, to save the crew, and the most valuable of the stores. They were at last obliged to abandon her, and they succeeded in conveying to the island, upon a raft, all their chests and

bedding, and the sails of the ship, for the purpose of being made into tents. Shortly afterwards, three English men of war, and the Canterbury, East India ship, arrived there; and Dampier, with some of his men, returned to England in the latter.

*Louisa.*—Is the account of this voyage to be found in the same work with the voyages you have already mentioned?

*Frederic.*—It was published in a third volume; and in the dedication Dampier complains that the world being apt to judge of every thing by its success, he had suffered extremely in reputation by the unavoidable loss of his ship.

*Edmund.*—His character had not, however, been so far injured as to prevent his being subsequently employed. In the Gazette of the eighteenth of April, 1703, it is stated that, “Captain Dampier, being prepared to depart on another voyage to the West Indies, had the honour to kiss her Majesty’s hand on Friday last.”

*Louisa.*—What account has been published of this voyage?

*Frederic.*—The particulars that are known respecting it are extremely few, unconnected, and unsatisfactory. He sailed in a ship called the *St. George*, in company with Captain Pickering, in a vessel called the *Cinque Ports*. They entered the South Sea, and Pickering dying, he was succeeded in the command of the *Cinque Ports* by Lieutenant Stradling. Stradling’s ship foundered, and he, with six or seven of his men only being saved, was taken prisoner and carried to Lima. Dampier seems to have parted company with him before this misfortune, for he not long afterwards returned to England.

*Mr. Allen.*—Subsequently to this, in the year 1708, Dampier appears to have been concerned in another expedition to the South Seas, the command of which was given to Captain Woodes Rogers. In this expedition Dampier had the situation of pilot.

*Frederic.*—Of the voyage of Rogers I have already said it is my intention to speak to-morrow ; at present, it will not perhaps be necessary to state more than that Dampier returned to England in 1711, from which period no information has been obtained respecting either the particulars of his life, or the time, place, or circumstances of his death.

*Mr. Allen.*—Respecting his character, it is but just to remark that he was a man of acute, sagacious and comprehensive mind ; and that his curiosity and thirst after knowledge were unbounded. In the different accounts which he has given of his voyages, the descriptions appear to be minute, extensive, and faithful. He was alike attentive to the natural history and the productions of the various countries he visited, their trade and manufactures, and the manners, habits, customs, religion, and general character of the inhabitants. As a writer he is entitled to considerable praise, his style is in general clear and perspicuous, strong, precise, and compact. His voyages have been frequently reprinted, and have been translated into several of the European languages.



## NINTH EVENING.

FREDERIC requested permission to read an abstract which he had mentioned last night, of a voyage round the world, by CAPTAIN WOODES ROGERS. With respect, however, to the private life of this officer, he stated that, unfortunately, he had not been able to obtain any information. He was a bold, active, and enterprising officer, and had been a great sufferer during a preceding war with France. But what peculiarly recommended him to the chief command of an expedition into the South Seas was the facility with which, on previous occasions, he had been able to maintain a

perfect authority over his seamen, and an extraordinary readiness which he possessed of devising expedients in the most difficult circumstances.

*Louisa*.—You have mentioned his having been appointed to the command of an expedition, but you have not mentioned either what was the object of that expedition, or by whom it was fitted out.

*Frederic*.—It was the same of which Mr. Allen spoke last night. At a time when this country was at war with Spain, several merchants residing at Bristol were desirous of speculating to a certain extent in building and sending out two strong and well-appointed ships, as privateers, to the South Seas. They not only took upon themselves all the expenses, but the care of every thing relating to the enterprise.

*Sir Charles*.—And there never was a voyage of this description more excellently adjusted, vessels in all respects better provided, or contrivances by which the accidents that usually happen to privateers were more effectually guarded against than the present.

*Frederic*.—The Duke, in which Captain Rogers sailed, was a vessel of three hundred tons burthen; and the Duchess, which was commanded by Captain Stephen Courtney, carried two hundred and seventy tons. The ships were commissioned to cruise on the coasts of Peru and Mexico in the South Seas against her Majesty's enemies, the French and Spaniards; and they were to act jointly, as belonging to the owners in Bristol, who had fitted them out. The rewards for the services of the officers and men were adjusted in certain proportions that were agreed upon previously to their sailing. The number of seamen in both the ships was three hundred and thirty-three, and that of the officers more than double what was customary in privateers.

*Louisa*.—What could be the reason of sending out so great a number of officers?

*Frederic*.—Chiefly to prevent mutinies, to which vessels sailing on long voyages are sometimes liable,



and also to secure a provision of commanders in case of death.

You will no doubt recollect that Captain Dampier, whose adventures were related last night, had the situation of pilot in this expedition.

NARRATIVE OF THE VOYAGE OF CAPTAIN WOODES ROGERS  
ROUND THE WORLD.

THE two vessels sailed from England about the middle of June, 1708. They passed the Canaries, and Cape de Verd islands, and arrived at the island of Grande, off the coast of Brazil, on the eighteenth of November. In the course of the voyage, however, much difficulty was experienced in consequence of discontent on the part of the seamen. This originated in the discharge of a vessel that had been taken, which the officers did not consider to be a legal prize, but the value of which the seamen did not like to lose. A mutiny subsequently broke out when the vessels were off the coast of Brazil, but by the prompt and equitable conduct of the officers the ringleaders were seized and punished, and tranquillity was restored.

Two sailors deserted from the *Duchess* to the island of Grande, with the intention of continuing there, but in the night they were so frightened by the howling of monkeys and baboons, that they ran into the shallow water of the sea, and shouted with all their might till the boats were sent out to fetch them on board.

As the principal destination of the expedition was to the opposite coasts of Mexico and Peru, the vessels did not long continue off Brazil. They shortly afterwards sailed round Cape Horn, and arrived at the island of Juan Fernandez on the first of February, 1709.

They were brought to anchor at the distance of about four leagues from the island. As it grew dark the seamen observed a light in the direction of the shore. Various opinions were formed respecting it, but the pre-

vailing notion was that some French vessels were lying in the bay, and that the light proceeded from one of them. Captain Rogers consequently ordered preparations to be made for attacking them as soon as daylight appeared. The ships gradually approached the shore ; every one was in activity, and the most anxious expectations were entertained. At the dawn of day, however, not a vessel of any description was to be seen. The captain sent a boat on shore with an officer and seven



men, all well armed. They returned to the ships, bringing with them the cause of all this anxiety, a man clad in goat skins, who looked even wilder than the animals from which he had stripped them. On inquiring who he was, he astonished the seamen by answering in English that he was a Scotsman, and that his name was Alexander Selkirk. Dampier immediately recognised him. This man had been four years and four months on the island, which had no other human inhabitant than himself, and on seeing the ships, which from their

appearance he imagined to be English, he had made a fire on the shore in hope of attracting their attention. This singular adventurer related his history as follows :

#### THE HISTORY OF ALEXANDER SELKIRK.

HE was born at Largo in Fifeshire, Scotland ; and, from his youth, had been a sailor. He left England in the year 1703 as master of a vessel called the Cinque Ports, commanded by Captain Charles Pickering, and in company with an armed ship, the St. George, commanded by Dampier. Pickering, as it was related last night, died on the voyage, and was succeeded in the command by Lieutenant Stradling. The vessels proceeded round Cape Horn to the island of Juan Fernandez, whence they were driven by the appearance of two strongly armed French ships. After having sailed to the coast of America, Stradling returned to the island. Here he and Selkirk having quarrelled, the latter expressed a determination to remain on the island alone. When the ship was ready to sail, his resolution failed, and he desired to be taken on board, but the captain refused to assent to this request. He was consequently left, after having been supplied with clothes, bedding, a musket, about a pound weight of gunpowder, and a small quantity of ball ; a hatchet, a knife, a kettle, a Bible, and a few other articles, with certain nautical and mathematical instruments.

Thus, though left the sole monarch of an island which contained an abundance of the necessaries of life, Selkirk was overwhelmed with distress ; and more than eighteen months elapsed before he could reconcile himself to his situation. He, however, diverted himself as well as he was able. He built two huts with pimento trees, covered them with long grass, and lined them with the skins of goats, which he killed with his gun as long as his powder lasted. Whenever he wanted a fire to cook his provisions by, or for other purposes, he made it by rubbing

briskly together two pieces of pimento wood among dry leaves upon his knee. His lesser hut, which was at some distance from the other, he used as a kitchen, and in the larger he slept and sat. Much of his time was employed in reading, singing psalms, and praying; so that, as he said, he had been a better Christian while in this solitude than he had ever been before, or than he was afraid he should ever be again.



For some time, at first, he never ate any thing till constrained to do so by hunger. This was partly occasioned by grief, and partly by the want of bread and salt, which his previous habits had rendered almost indispensable to him. He did not retire to rest at night until he was able to sit up no longer. The pimento wood burnt very bright, and served him both for fire and candle; and at the same time refreshed him by its fragrant perfume. With respect to food, he had a

plentiful supply of fish, but he found it disagree with his stomach, owing to the want of salt: he, however, relished the lobsters, or cray-fish, which were large and good, and which he sometimes boiled, and sometimes broiled. He also killed many goats, (at different times more than five hundred) and cooked their flesh in the same manner as he did the lobsters. When his powder failed, he had no other means of obtaining these animals than by running them down, and seizing them with his hands. This, by continued exercise, he was soon enabled to do; and at length he became so fleet of foot, as seldom to fail in the pursuit. He said that his agility in pursuing a goat had, in one instance, nearly cost him his life. The animal ran to a precipice, on the brink of which Selkirk caught hold of it; and they fell together from an immense height. For some time he was senseless; and when he recovered, he found the goat dead under him. For four-and-twenty hours he was unable to move; and then was scarcely able to crawl to his hut, which was about a mile distant, or to go abroad again for nearly ten days.

After a while he was able sufficiently to relish his meat without either salt or bread. At the proper season he found, near his habitation, a good crop of turnips, the seed of which had first been sown there by some of the crew of Captain Dampier's ship; and which, at length, overspread several acres of ground. The island also spontaneously produced many other excellent kinds of vegetables. The pimento trees furnished him with all-spice, or Jamaica pepper, for seasoning his food; and from another species of tree he obtained a kind of black pepper. The latter he not only found useful with his food, but in many respects as a medicine. His only drink was water.

Selkirk had not long been in this island before he wore out all his clothes and shoes. The former he contrived to supply from the skins of the goats he killed; and as to the latter, his feet soon became so hard, that he could walk very well without them.



At length, his mind becoming calm and reconciled, he grew happy; and contrived to occupy his time pleasantly in decorating his huts, procuring food, and in other pursuits. He often diverted himself by cutting his name on the trees, noting the period of his having been left, and of his continuance there.

For some time he had been much pestered both with cats and rats, which had bred in great numbers, from a few of each species which had escaped to the shore from different ships that had been at the island. The rats gnawed his feet and clothes whilst he was asleep. This induced him to encourage the breed of cats, which he fed with goat's flesh, till they became so numerous and so tame that they would lie around him in hundreds. They, however, delivered him from the rats. He also tamed several kids; and, to amuse himself, would now and then sing and dance with them and his cats. He was at this time not more than thirty years of age.

The mode in which he made his clothes was to cut the goat-skins into proper shape, and then stitch them together with little strips of the same skin, which he cut with his knife. He had no other needle than a nail; and, having some linen cloth by him, he made shirts with it, sewing them with the nail, and with the worsted of his old stockings, which he unravelled for that purpose. He had his last shirt on at the time of Captain Rogers's arrival. When his knife was worn to the back, he made others as well as he could, out of old iron hoops, which had been left on the shore; and which he beat thin, and ground upon stones.

During the time that Selkirk had been on this island he had seen many ships pass by it, but only two of them came into the bay to anchor. He at first supposed these to be French, but, upon the crews landing, he found them to be Spaniards; of whom he had so great a dread, lest he should be put to death, or sent as a slave to the mines, that he did not dare to trust himself in their power. They, however, accidentally saw him, and



he did not effect his escape from them without great difficulty. They fired at him, and pursued him into the woods, where he climbed to the top of a tree, at the foot of which they stopped, and near which they killed several goats ; but at last they went away and left him.

Although this poor man had constantly performed his devotions at stated hours, and had read aloud, yet when he was found by Captain Rogers's seamen, his language, from disuse of conversation, in little more than four years, had become almost wholly unintelligible. He seemed to speak his words by halves. The sailors offered him a dram, but he would drink nothing except water ; and, when he first tasted the ship's provisions, he could not relish them. Selkirk was employed by Captain Rogers to catch goats for the ships. A bull-dog, that had been kept on board, was sent to assist him ; but he soon distanced and tired both the dog and the men, caught the goats, and brought them on his back. As he was desirous of leaving the island, and accompanying the ships, the captain agreed to take him as a mate ; and he was thus liberated from his long and solitary imprisonment.

The island of Juan Fernandez is described to have been extremely pleasant ; the climate to have been excellent ; and the trees and other verdure in the highest degree luxuriant. The winter lasts no longer than the months of June and July, and is by no means severe. The island, at that time, abounded in wild goats ; and on the shores there were such multitudes of sea-lions, and other kinds of seals, that the sailors could scarcely walk along the beach on account of them. They were to be seen lying in immense flocks, like so many sheep ; and some of them were as thick in the body as an English ox.

Captain Rogers continued off Juan Fernandez about a fortnight, during which time the crews of both the

vessels were enabled to obtain an abundant supply of wood and water, fresh meat and fish. With Selkirk on board they then sailed for the western coast of South America.

The ships in their progress northward to the town of Guayaquil, on the Spanish main, made prizes of several small coasting vessels. A plan was laid for surprising and plundering this town; and in the night the ships passed up the river for that purpose. But they were discovered by the centinels, a signal was given, the beacons were fired, the alarm bell was rung, and every preparation for defence was made. They, however, proceeded up the river, and took possession of two ships. Soon after this the governor came on board to treat for the ransom of the place, but the terms could not be agreed on. The English landed, attacked, and possessed themselves of the town, driving the enemy before them. At last it was agreed, that, if they would retire without plundering the place, they should be paid the sum of thirty thousand dollars. Previously to this, however, they had conveyed on board the ships a quantity of flour, corn, oil, wine, and stores, of various kinds; together with four pieces of cannon, several muskets, and plate and jewels of considerable value.

After the agreement for the ransom, no further depredations were committed; and the sailors being all again on board, and the money having been paid, Captain Rogers gave orders for sailing in a north-westerly direction, towards the Gallipagos islands. The crews of both the vessels now began to suffer much from a contagious fever that they had contracted during their stay at Guayaquil. When they arrived at those islands the captain sent men on shore in several places to search for water, but could not find any. The island on which they first landed appeared to be entirely volcanic. They landed on some others, but were disappointed in all; and many of the men died.

Captain Rogers having been informed, that numerous

conveniences and comforts were to be had in the island of Gorgona, he now determined to proceed thither. Immediately after his arrival at this island, he landed all the sick men ; and caused several tents to be erected on the shore. In about a fortnight the ships were amply stored with provisions, and thoroughly cleansed, repaired, and refitted for sea. Captain Rogers also armed and fitted out a large vessel, that he had lately taken. This was named the Marquis. The sick being now nearly all recovered, the vessels were preparing to leave the island, when information was given to the captain of a mutiny among his crew. The ringleaders were seized and put into irons, and the others who had joined in it immediately submitted.

The ships left Gorgona on the eleventh of August, and, in their course towards the coast of California, Captain Rogers determined once again to call at the Gallipagos. He now discovered that one of these islands had a good harbour, was well stocked with wood, and had plenty of water, with turtle and sea tortoises in great abundance. There were also many seals. One of these, a very large one, ran from the water open-mouthed at him as he was walking along the shore. He fortunately had in his hand a strong staff with an iron point. This he plunged into the breast of the seal, which made it stagger ; but the enraged animal attacked him twice afterwards, and would probably have killed him, had not the weapon each time severely wounded it ; and at last forced it to retire, snarling, into the water. On one of the other islands the crews obtained more than two hundred and fifty turtles, some of the largest of which were betwixt three and four hundred pounds in weight.

On the first of October the vessels were within sight of the coast of Mexico ; and, on the first of the ensuing month, they arrived at Cape St. Lucas, the southern extremity of the coast of California. Here Captain Rogers had been led to hope he might be able to meet with some of the valuable Spanish ships which annually trade

betwixt Manilla, in the Philippine islands, and Acapulco, a principal town on the western coast of Mexico. In this expectation he was not deceived. A vessel from Manilla, carrying twenty guns, was discovered, and after a sharp engagement of about three hours, was taken. During the engagement with this vessel, Captain Rogers was shot through the left cheek: the bullet carried away great part of his upper jaw and several of his teeth, some of which dropped upon the deck. The mainmast of the Duke, the vessel that he commanded, was disabled by a cannon shot, and some parts of the rigging were damaged.

By the prisoners taken in this vessel, he was informed that a ship of still larger size had sailed from Manilla at the same time with this. It was consequently agreed to return to the harbour, near Cape St. Lucas, and refit the vessels as speedily as possible; and that the Duchess and Marquis should afterwards proceed in search of her; whilst the Duke, Captain Rogers's ship, was left in the harbour to arrange all the matters relative to the prize, and secure the prisoners. These vessels accordingly sailed on Christmas-day; and Rogers posted two centinels on a hill which commanded an extensive view of the sea, giving them instructions, if they saw three ships in the offing, immediately to make a signal. On the ensuing day the appointed signal was made. Captain Rogers secured his prisoners, and, with all the expedition possible, sailed to assist his comrades. He approached during the night; and on the following morning, could see the Duchess near the expected Spanish ship, and the Marquis standing towards them with all the sail she could carry. In the afternoon the Marquis got up with the Spaniard, and engaged her briskly: but she soon fell to the leeward, out of cannon shot, to repair her rigging, which had been disabled by the enemy. The Spanish vessel was closely pursued all night, during which the Marquis again engaged her for more than four hours. About this time the Duchess, having also been active in the engagement



was obliged to steer to a distance, to stop her leaks and repair her rigging. While this was proceeding, the Marquis again bore up, and kept the enemy in play till the Duchess again was ready, when each fired a broadside or two, and left off in consequence of its becoming quite dark. The captain of the Marquis soon afterwards sent a boat to the Duke, to say that he had fired away nearly all his powder and shot. The boat returned with three barrels of powder and a proportion of shot. The Duke had hitherto been unable to come near enough to the enemy to participate in the fight. About daylight on the morning of the twenty-eighth, however, she also was enabled to bring her guns to bear upon the enemy. Soon after this the enemy, apparently despising all the efforts that were made against her, ceased from firing. Her crew, which was very numerous, kept so close that not a man was to be seen, and the vessel herself was

suffered to drive before the wind. Suddenly, however, a fire-ball was thrown from her on board the Duke. This fell upon a chest of loaded arms and cartridges, which instantly blew up, and, it was feared, would set the vessel on fire. The ammunition of the three vessels being nearly all exhausted, their masts and rigging having been much damaged, some of the men having been killed, and many others badly wounded, and no hope being left of succeeding, it was at last agreed to desist from any further attempt, and to return to the harbour where the prize had been left, secure her, and repair the damage they had sustained.

In this engagement, Captain Rogers had received another severe wound. A splinter, struck from the ship by a cannon-ball, carried away part of his heel-bone, and cut his foot nearly half through. Thus ended the attempt to take possession of a very strong and powerful vessel, carrying sixty guns, and having a complement of four hundred and fifty men, who were resolved to defend their ship and their lives to the last extremity.

It was now resolved to proceed immediately to the East Indies ; and having taken from their former prize nearly as much bread as appeared requisite for the voyage across the Pacific Ocean, Captain Rogers supplied his prisoners with a sufficiency of water and provisions, and gave them a small vessel, which he had also taken, to carry them to Acapulco. The prize ship he fitted up to accompany him, and named it the Bachelor. He had now four vessels under his command ; and these, after having taken in all their stores, wood, water, and provisions, sailed from the coast of California on the tenth of January, 1710.

In their passage they suffered much inconvenience from a want of sufficient provisions. On the eleventh of March they arrived within sight of the island of Guam, where they obtained so large an additional supply, that the Duke alone received sixty hogs, ninety-nine fowls, twenty-four baskets of maize, fourteen bags of rice,



forty-two baskets of yams, and eight hundred cocoa-nuts. This vessel also afterwards received for her further share, fourteen bullocks, two cows, and two calves. With this ample supply on board, the squadron proceeded in a westerly direction.

On the eighteenth of May they passed northward of New Guinea, betwixt that island and Gilolo; and, twelve days afterwards, came to anchor, in a fine bay, off the island of Booton, one of the Moluccas. A boat was here sent on shore, which returned laden with cocoa-nuts. The natives also went off to the ships in canoes, carrying with them wheat, cocoa-nuts, yams, potatoes, fruit, and poultry, to barter for cloth, knives, scissars, and toys. These people were Mahometans, and well behaved. The men were of middle stature, and tawny colour; and in general naked, except a piece of cloth which each of them wore round his waist. A few of them, however, had a sort of loose waistcoats, and a piece of linen rolled round their heads; with a cap of palm leaves to keep off the scorching rays of the sun. The king of this island was attended by four men (carrying great canes with silver heads), who seemed to manage all his affairs. He was dressed not much unlike a Dutch skipper, but with a sort of green gauze, strewed with spangles, over his long black hair. When he appeared in state, he wore a long calico gown over his jacket, and sat on a chair covered with red cloth.

The ships continued a week at Booton, when they sailed for Batavia, a large town on the north coast of the island of Java, and then in possession of the Dutch; and they arrived in this port, which they had long been desirous of reaching, a little after the middle of June. Here the seamen, who of late had been extremely discontented and quarrelsome, could not sufficiently express their joy. They congratulated each other in the most cordial manner, on their arrival in what they esteemed the most delightful place on the earth:—situated, it is true, in the midst of swamps and stagnant

pools, where the atmosphere is constantly loaded with fogs, and where diseases of the most fatal kind are daily generated ; but where arrack and other spirituous liquors could be bought for eight-pence a gallon, and sugar for a penny a pound.

When the vessels were examined, they were found to be so much worm-eaten and decayed, in all the parts below the water, that it was necessary they should undergo a complete repair. The masts also, and much of the rigging, had to be renewed ; and it was considered advisable to sell the *Marquis*, and proceed to Europe with only the other three. During the time the ships were at Batavia the weather was exceedingly hot, and many, both of the officers and men, suffered much from sickness.

The ships left Batavia on the fourteenth of October. In about two months they reached the Cape of Good Hope, where they remained till the beginning of April. They then proceeded homeward, and, on the first of October, 1711, Captain Rogers brought his little squadron safely to anchor in the Downs, having been absent from England somewhat more than three years and a quarter.

*Louisa*.—This circumnavigation, *Frederic*, was nothing more than a privateering excursion, in which, as Captain Rogers found it more convenient, when in the South Seas, to return to Europe by the East Indies than by Cape Horn, he happened as it were accidentally to sail round the world.

*Sir Charles*.—Such was certainly the case ; and perhaps the voyage of Rogers is not so interesting on account of any important discoveries that he made, as from its comprising the narrative of a bold, active, and enterprising officer, who had many difficulties to encounter, and whose courage and perseverance enabled him to overcome them all, and return to his native country possessed of considerable wealth. The outfit of the voyage cost about fifteen thousand pounds, and its gross

profits amounted to about one hundred and seventy thousand pounds. Of these, according to the agreement that was entered into before the ships left England, half was to be paid to the owners, and the other half in certain proportions, to the officers and seamen.

*Edmund.*—Their attack of the large Manilla ship, and their persevering endeavours, for several successive days, to take her, have not often been exceeded. It is said that, although all these proved of no avail, the three vessels fired into her no fewer than five hundred cannon shot.

*Lady Irwin.*—There is one circumstance that I admire in the conduct of Captain Rogers, and the other officers of his squadron. This is their general good conduct and humanity towards their prisoners. They did not, as some succeeding adventurers have done, take the ships and set the men who had navigated them ashore at the first place they came to, whether desolate or not; but they appear to have taken the means of sending them to civilized places, whence they would have little difficulty in afterwards reaching their own homes.

*Louisa.*—What I am most pleased with in this voyage is the history of Alexander Selkirk, which indeed I had read before. It appears very singular that, in so few years, though he accustomed himself in the meantime to read aloud, he should have nearly lost the use of his native language. The strength of body and agility which he acquired during his residence at Juan Fernandez, are also very remarkable. It must be an extremely beautiful island! I should much like to see it.

*Mr. Allen.*—This island is now very different from what it was formerly. The Spanish colonists of South America have taken possession of it, and use it as a place of banishment for their convicts. All its former character is consequently lost. At the spot which Selkirk inhabited there is now a fortified town.

*Louisa.*—I am sorry to hear this; for I have always been accustomed to contemplate it as the abode

of innocence and happiness. What kind of a place is Batavia?

*Mr. Allen.*—At the time that Captain Rogers was there it was the metropolis of the Dutch commerce and settlements in India; and was well situated for the trade in cloves, nutmegs, cinnamon, and other spices, of which they had then the entire control. It lies in a bay in which there are seventeen or eighteen small islands. The streets are built in straight lines, and most of them are thirty feet and upwards in width. Fifteen of the streets have canals for small vessels running through them. The houses are well built; and the place, at the time Captain Rogers was there, was fully inhabited. Batavia was taken by the English in the year 1811; but it has since been restored to the Dutch.

---

## TENTH EVENING.

EDMUND this evening commenced the history of GEORGE LORD ANSON, who, he said, was the third son of a Staffordshire gentleman, and born in the parish of Colwich, in that county, in the month of April, 1697. Mr. Anson made choice of the naval service for his profession, and was early sent to sea.

*Frederic.*—Yes; and, even while a boy, he attracted the attention of his commander, by a strict obedience to his orders, great correctness of conduct, and the indication of those superior qualities, which subsequently enabled him to attain great distinction.

*Louisa.*—Was he in the merchant service?

*Edmund.*—He was in the royal navy; and was made second lieutenant of his majesty's ship the Hampshire, by Sir John Norris, the commander-in-chief of a squadron that was sent to the Baltic. After this his promotion was very rapid.

*Sir Charles.*—And his talents and services were such

as well to deserve promotion: he was elevated to the rank of post-captain, and was appointed to the command of the Scarborough man-of-war, when little more than twenty-six years of age. Frederic, do you recollect to what part of the world he sailed in this vessel; and what particular circumstances occurred while he had the command of it?

*Frederic.*—He sailed to South Carolina, where he was stationed three years. During this time he founded a town, which, after himself, he named Anson Burgh; and he traced the boundaries of a district, called Anson's County. Captain Anson returned to England in October 1727; and, in the month of May following, his ship was paid off.

*Sir Charles.*—But he subsequently visited South Carolina again.

*Frederic.*—He did, sir, more than once; and it is supposed, that his subsequent appointments to this station were made at his own solicitation. He was naturally anxious for the success of his new colony, particularly as by various purchases and arrangements, he had now become possessed, in his own right, of an extensive territory there.

*Louisa.*—He seems to have been a man of very active mind, and to have been constantly engaged on service.

*Edmund.*—After Captain Anson's third return from Carolina, in the spring of 1735, his ship was paid off, and he was out of employment for some time.

*Sir Charles.*—Having now attained his thirty-eighth year, he was arrived at a time of life in which the hopes and conceptions of youthful genius acquire the consistency of projects and designs. The life of a sailor had injured him to hardship, and had added a relish, even for dangers, to his constitutional predilection for adventures.

*Louisa.*—But what, sir, could have been his motive for founding a town and a county in America? Did he expect, by such a speculation, to obtain wealth?

*Sir Charles.*—His motives could not, certainly, have been dictated by any hope of immediate profit, for such speculations seldom yield much emolument to their projectors. They must have originated in the workings of that ambition, which, fostered by the vastness of the American wilds, afterwards urged him to seek for its gratification in a voyage round the globe.

Edmund will relate to you the origin of this celebrated voyage.

*Edmund.*—The conduct of Captain Anson, in his various situations and employments, had produced in the public mind so favourable an opinion of his capacity and enterprising spirit, that when (in the war which broke out with Spain, in 1739) it was determined to attack the Spanish settlements along the western coast of America, he was fixed upon to be the commander of the fleet that was designed for that service. It was the object of this expedition, by attacking the power of Spain in her distant settlements, to cut off her principal resources, and reduce her to the necessity of seriously desiring peace. The enterprise thus projected would, it was hoped, deprive that country of those returns of treasure by which alone she could be enabled to carry on a war.

*Frederic.*—And had this squadron been promptly sent out, it might have proved extremely injurious to the crown of Spain; but its sailing was most unaccountably delayed for several months. The Spaniards consequently had ample notice to prepare for defence in every quarter. The blundering Duke of Newcastle, who was then one of the principal secretaries of state, delivered to Captain Anson the king's instructions, in the latter end of June, 1740; and these instructions bore date nearly five months before.

*Mr. Allen.*—This was a sufficient proof of the procrastinating spirit in which the enterprise was undertaken: but it was trivial in its effects, when compared with the other instances of official misconduct and ignorance with which it had to contend, and to which all the



misfortunes that it afterwards suffered ought to be ascribed.

*Frederic.*—Indeed, sir, when the whole of the circumstances are considered, there seems less cause to admire the wonderful constancy and fortitude with which Anson's voyage round the world was performed, than to think that any men, however exalted their station, should have had the audacity to send from England an expedition destined to encounter the hardships and casualties of war on the other side of the globe, in a state of decrepitude that rendered it incapable of accomplishing any undertaking, in which only common capacity and labour were required.

After Captain Anson had received his instructions he went to Portsmouth, and found that three hundred seamen were still wanting for his ships.

*Lady Irwin.*—Then I suppose he sailed without his proper number ; this, however, must have rendered his enterprise a very hazardous one.

*Frederic.*—He made an effort to obtain them, but he at last received only a hundred and seventy, of whom many were brought from the hospitals. The land force of the expedition was to consist of five hundred soldiers ; and these were collected from among the out-pensioners of Chelsea Hospital, who, from age, wounds, or other infirmities, had previously been considered incapable of active service.

*Louisa.*—How great a weight of responsibility Captain Anson must have had, in taking the command of a squadron thus wretchedly appointed !

*Edmund.*—You have not yet heard the worst. Nearly all those of the pensioners, who were really efficient, deserted : and most of the men who were left, and were destined to act against a powerful and vigilant enemy in a distant climate, were literally invalids, and from sixty to seventy years of age.

*Sir Charles.*—It is said to have been difficult to imagine a more affecting scene than the embarkation of

these unhappy veterans. They were themselves extremely averse to the service in which they were about to be engaged; and were fully apprized of the nature of all those disasters to which they were afterwards exposed. Thus to be dragged from their repose into a fatiguing employment, to which neither the strength of their bodies, nor the vigour of their minds were, in any degree, proportioned, was to them a lamentable exchange of situation indeed.

*Mr. Allen.*—We are led to understand that the whole detachment seemed to be made up of the most decrepit and miserable objects that could be collected together. To supply the place of the deserted pensioners, two hundred and ten marines, from different regiments, were ordered on board the ships. These, in contrast to the Chelsea veterans, were raw and undisciplined troops just raised; and are said to have had, at the time, scarcely any thing more of the soldier than their regimentals.

*Lady Irwin.*—But did not Captain Anson remonstrate on the subject of an equipment, which, from his own previous experience of service in foreign climates, he must have known could not be equal to the performance of the services that would be required?

*Sir Charles.*—He did remonstrate, and in his remonstrances was joined even by the first lord of the admiralty; but these were of no avail. That lord was told that persons who were better judges than either he or Anson, had considered such invalids to be the best seasoned, and the fittest troops that could be sent out.

*Edmund.*—But, sir, there were even still further inconveniences, which the commander or commodore of the squadron, as he was now called, had to encounter. His sailing had been delayed to such a season, that his passage round Cape Horn to the Pacific Ocean, would necessarily take place during the midst of winter, and consequently at the most inclement and dangerous season of the year.

*Sir Charles.*—Of what ships, Edmund, did the squadron consist, and when did it sail?

*Edmund* —It consisted of five men of war, a sloop of war, and two victualling ships. The *Centurion*, which was the flag ship, or that in which the commodore himself sailed, mounted sixty guns, and carried four hundred men.

NARRATIVE OF COMMODORE ANSON'S VOYAGE ROUND THE  
WORLD.

ON the tenth of August, 1740, the squadron sailed from Portsmouth to St. Helens, where it was obliged to wait for a favourable wind until the eighteenth of September. After this it cleared the British Channel in four days;



and the commodore then directed its course to the island of Madeira. Here he received an additional supply of water, with several hogsheads of wine, and other refreshments; and then sailed towards the island of St.

Catherine, on the coast of Brazil. In the morning of the eighteenth of December, the mountainous coast of Brazil was plainly distinguishable, and three days afterwards the squadron anchored off St. Catherine's. As the commodore proposed to remain here some time, for the purpose of obtaining refreshments and recovering his men, several of whom were suffering dreadfully from scurvy and other complaints, his first care was to get the sick men on shore. He then caused the vessels to be purified, by washing and fumigation; a work that had been rendered imperiously necessary, by the noisome stench and the vermin which the heat of the climate and the crowded state of the crews had occasioned.

He continued here about three weeks, and on his departure, proceeded towards the bay of St. Julian. Hitherto the squadron had suffered little from tempestuous weather; but almost immediately after the vessels had left St. Catherine's, the winds became squally, with thunder, lightning, and rain. At St. Julian's, the commodore caused the squadron to be anchored, for the purpose chiefly of refitting one of the ships, part of whose main-mast had been carried away in the late squalls. As soon as this was completed, he continued his course towards Cape Horn.

On the afternoon of the day that he left St. Julian's, there was an alarm of fire on board the Gloucester. A sudden flame burst out, which was succeeded by a cloud of smoke. This had been occasioned by a spark of fire from the forge lighting some gunpowder and other combustibles; but it was soon extinguished, and without any damage to the ship.

It was now autumn in this part of the world. The fine weather was always of short duration; and, in contrast and proportion to the serenity and brightness of the day, was, almost invariably, the turbulence and gloom of the night. On the sixth of March the squadron came within sight of the Terra del Fuego, which presented a dismal prospect of stupendous black rocks, crowned with

perpetual snow. Bearing towards the Strait of Le Maire, the craggy peaks and refted mountains of Staten Island appeared in view, and even surpassed in wildness and horror the wintry barrenness of Terra del Fuego. The whole island seemed to be composed of inaccessible rocks, piled in pyramidal heaps, that rose through the clouds in abrupt and ragged pinnacles, tipped with silvery whiteness. With these were intermingled black and frightful cliffs, which every where seemed to refuse the chance of escape to the mariner who might be wrecked on so hideous a coast. But, notwithstanding these terrific views, the seamen were observed to contemplate the scene with delight. The sky was clear, the breeze brisk and favourable, and the stately vessels sailed along the dark and inhospitable shores with a rapidity that invigorated the cheerful hopes which began to arise in every bosom. All now began to indulge their imaginations in romantic schemes relative to the fancied possession of the treasures of Chili and Peru: they imagined that they should shortly realize those golden dreams in which, during the course of the voyage, they had fondly indulged. Thus animated they passed onward, ignorant of the dreadful calamities which were then impending, and nearly ready to break upon them; ignorant that the time drew near when the squadron would be separated never to unite again; and that even this was the last cheerful day which the greatest part of them would ever enjoy.

Scarcely had the sternmost ship cleared the Strait of Le Maire, than the sky was suddenly overcast; the wind shifted, and blew in violent squalls. The tide, which had hitherto flowed in their course, turned at once furiously against them, and the *Wager*, one of the ships, was in imminent danger of being dashed in pieces against the frightful cliffs of Staten island. The sea was raised into billows that surpassed every commotion of the waves which the oldest of the sailors on board had hitherto witnessed. The ships rolled incessantly, and with such quick and violent motion, that the men were in perpetual

danger of being dashed to pieces against the decks or sides ; and some of them were killed, and others were severely wounded by the shocks. This dreadful storm was rendered still more terrible by the snow and sleet with which it was accompanied ; and which encrusted the rigging with ice, and stiffened the sails into a consistency as hard, and nearly as brittle, as glass.

All these sufferings were the natural consequences of that delay which had taken place in fitting out the expedition in England. Many of the men, by the severity of the weather, had their hands and feet frozen. On the twenty-third of March, the main-sail of the *Centurion* was split into rags by the wind ; and, notwithstanding every exertion that could be made, the greater part of it was blown overboard.

About ten days after this another storm arose, which exceeded in vehemence all that the squadron had yet experienced. At its first onset, a dreadful wave broke over the *Centurion*, and damaged both her hull and rigging. During the night succeeding this accident, guns of distress were heard : and, at break of day, the *Wager* was seen far off to leeward, with her mizen-mast and main topsail-yard both gone. She was shortly afterwards missing entirely. The fate of this vessel affords one of the most dreadful histories of shipwreck that have ever been recorded.\*

The weather now became more moderate ; and it continued so till the twenty-fourth of April, when the wind changed, the atmosphere became extremely thick, and another tempest came on. About midnight, the commodore missed the remaining four ships of his squadron, and the *Centurion* was left alone. Dreadful as this tempest was, the boisterous elements were scarcely less terrible than the disease of the scurvy with which the men were at this time afflicted. Nearly every individual suffered by it ; and, in the course of

\* See an account of it in the life of Commodore Byron.



two months, more than a hundred and twenty, of those on board the *Centurion* only, died. The condition of these ships, under the double affliction of storm and disease, can neither be described nor imagined. The mind of man is absolutely incapable of forming an adequate idea of so much collective and individual suffering as was here experienced. The loathsome state of the vessel was dreadful in the extreme.

The island of Juan Fernandez was first seen by the crew of the *Centurion* on the ninth of June. Three months previously to this, she had passed the Strait of Le Maire, with upwards of four hundred men all in health. Such was now her deplorable condition, shattered by storms in the hull, and weakened by disease in the crew, that she could scarcely muster hands enough to manage the ship. On the evening of that day on which she made the island, the debility of the crew seemed to have reached the utmost. Six of the seamen only were found capable of duty; and but for the officers and their attendants, it might have been impossible for the ship to have attained an anchorage. This was the more distressing, as in the course of the afternoon the ship had been within view of the shore, and the sylvan scenery of that beautiful island was endeared to the wishes of the unhappy men on board, by the contrast which it exhibited to the horrors of Staten Island, and Terra del Fuego. They saw from the deck the precipices crowned with trees, the valleys clad with verdure, and refreshed by innumerable streams and falling waters. The sick men felt their spirits revive as they gazed on this desired elysium, and a glowing pleasure, like the sensation of returning health, was diffused through their parched and withered frames. It is therefore impossible to form any notion of the distress which pierced the hearts of these invalids, whenever their fears suggested a possibility that they might not be able to land.

In the course of the night, however, the ship came to

anchor, and, at four in the morning, the commodore sent the boat and a party of men to the shore. Had the Centurion continued much longer at sea, there is reason to suppose that every man on board must have perished.

All the preparations which the circumstances of the ship afforded, were made on the ensuing day for the accommodation of the sick, who were, for the most part, so infirm that it was impossible to convey them to the shore except in their hammocks or beds. This was a laborious work to the few that were in health, but the commodore and the other officers contributed their utmost assistance.

The tent of the commodore was pitched on a small lawn, that sloped with a gentle descent towards the sea; and was at the distance of about half a mile from the shore. An avenue was cut through the woods in front,



which afforded a prospect of the sea and of the ships at anchor. On each side of the tent ran a stream of the purest water that can be imagined, shaded by the trees

that skirted the lawn; and behind the whole rose a grove of myrtle, in the form of a theatre, beyond which the inland hills and cliffs, decorated with trees, and pouring here and there beautiful cascades, were seen, in various perspective, extending into the interior of the country. The sick men, in this elysium, soon recovered both their health and spirits.

The arrival of another of the ships, the *Trial*, induced the commodore to hope that he should speedily be joined by the rest of his squadron. In somewhat more than a fortnight another vessel was seen approaching the island. Immediately boats, laden with fresh water, fish, and vegetables, were despatched to her assistance. She proved to be the *Gloucester*. When the boats arrived alongside this ship, it was found that two-thirds of her crew had died, and that, except the officers and their servants, there was scarcely a man on board who was able to keep the deck. The stores, too, were so far exhausted, that had not this dreadful mortality occurred, many must have perished of thirst. Some of the ships were still missing, and every conjecture respecting them was tinged by the most frightful apprehension.

About the beginning of September, when the sick were recovered by their residence on shore, Anson prepared again to put to sea. He had now only three vessels, the *Centurion*, the *Gloucester*, and the *Trial*; and the number of men to navigate the three, were scarcely sufficient for one: for of nine hundred and sixty-one persons, who had come out with him from England, six hundred and twenty-six had perished. Thus weakened, it became impossible for him to think of attempting any extensive operations against the enemy's settlements on land, one of the most important objects of the expedition; and he was compelled to direct his views almost solely against their ships.

From one of these, which was taken by the *Centurion*, not long after she had left the island of Juan Fernandez, the commodore learnt that, in consequence

of the delay that had taken place in the original fitting out of his vessels, the Spanish government had been able to apprize the different colonies of the approach of a hostile squadron into the South Seas, and to put them on their guard against attack. This was an additional reason for Anson to employ his squadron almost wholly in cruising. He accordingly manned the Spanish prize, as well as he was able, from the other vessels, and allotted to each a particular station.

A large Spanish merchantman was taken by the *Trial*; but the gratification which this incident afforded was soon lessened by the misfortunes which befel the *Trial* herself. She received so much damage in a storm which shortly afterwards ensued, that it was found necessary to destroy her, and to transfer her crew into the prize.

During the time that had been lost by the *Centurion* in attending to this ship, a fleet of Spanish merchantmen, which the commodore had expected to intercept, was enabled to get safely into port; and the squadron continued to cruise for a considerable time without any success. On the eleventh of November the *Centurion* captured a rich merchantman from Paita; and, from information which the commodore had now obtained, he determined, weak as he was in men, to make an attack on that town.

This he did the same night; and, though the place was defended by a small battery, and had an armed force of at least three hundred men, sixty sailors from the different vessels were landed almost without opposition. On their approach to the town, the inhabitants fired once upon them, and then, without further opposition, fled to the mountains, leaving the place in their hands.

The first object of the assailants, after they had taken possession, was to secure the treasure which the place contained, and which, in plate and coin alone, was valued at about thirty thousand pounds sterling. But the men employed in searching for this, could not be prevented from entering several houses, in search of

private pillage. In doing this, that wanton spirit which is so strongly characteristic of British sailors, was peculiarly manifested. They took the finely laced and embroidered clothes of the Spaniards, and triumphantly put them on over their own dirty jackets and trowsers,



not forgetting the wigs and laced hats. When this was once begun, it was impossible to prevent the whole detachment from doing the same ; and some, who came too late to find men's clothes to equip themselves in, were obliged to be content with the women's gowns and petticoats. These they put on, blending the Spanish female finery with their own greasy dresses. When a party of the men thus absurdly metamorphosed first appeared before the lieutenant appointed to command them, he was utterly astonished, and some minutes elapsed before he could recognise them as his own people.

As soon as all the valuables that could conveniently



be carried away were collected together, an attempt was made by the commodore to negotiate for the ransom of the merchandize, threatening, if terms were not agreed upon, that he would set fire to the town and warehouses. The governor, who had retired from the town at the first attack, did not condescend even to return an answer; and the place was burnt.

Leaving Paita, the commodore proceeded towards California, with the intention of touching somewhere in the neighbourhood of Panama, to open, if possible, a correspondence overland with Admiral Vernon, who, as he had reason to expect, ought, by this time, to have been in possession of Carthagena. But, on examining the papers found on board the prize that was taken after he had quitted Paita, it was discovered that Vernon's expedition had failed. He was, therefore, compelled to give up the design he had formed with respect to Panama, and to devote his whole future attention to cruising, and particularly to an attempt to capture one of the galleons, or valuable treasure ships, which then annually sailed betwixt Manilla and Acapulco.

In pursuance of this object, the squadron was steered towards the island of Quibo, where it was anchored on the twenty-first of December. At this island the commodore obtained a supply of wood and water; and having ascertained, from captured vessels, that the departure of a galleon from Acapulco was fixed for the third of March, he took care to have his vessels so distributed, at the distance of a few leagues from that port, that it was considered impossible it could escape. After a watchful impatience for many days, all their hopes, however, proved fruitless. The commodore was obliged to abandon his scheme; and thus, for the present, at least, to relinquish those golden expectations which had cheered both himself and his companions in their arduous voyage, and through so many hardships as they had bravely sustained.

After having obtained a further supply of water, he



now resolved to sail for China ; and, with this intention, he left the coast of America, on the sixth of May, 1742. During this part of the voyage the Gloucester was nearly dismasted in a storm, and was otherwise so much damaged that the commodore found it necessary to remove her crew into his own ship, and destroy her. After this he continued his course across the Pacific Ocean. The scurvy once again raged on board the Centurion, and her crew was daily diminished by it.

On the twenty-seventh of August he reached the island of Tinian (one of the group that had been named by Magalhaens the Ladrones), and which, in beauty and fertility seemed to rival the scenery and climate of Juan Fernandez. The crew were immediately landed ; and, though the mortality in the ships had been so great that twenty men had died in one day, nearly all those who were still alive speedily recovered. In the course of two months, during which they continued at Tinian, only ten men died.

At this time the whole squadron that had sailed from England had been dispersed, and all the ships destroyed, except the Centurion. She alone, of all that had doubled Cape Horn, was destined to return home. One night, while the commodore was on shore at Tinian, ill of the scurvy, a storm came on, which drove the ship out to sea. The wind blew so violently that the guns she fired as signals of distress, could not be heard on shore ; and incessant flashes of lightning prevented their explosion from being distinguished. At the dawn of day the ship was no longer in sight : every one was terror-struck. It was imagined that she must have sunk ; and the commodore was entreated to send a boat in quest of the wreck. Most of those who were on shore abandoned themselves to despair : they saw no prospect but of passing the remainder of their days on an island where perhaps no European ship had ever before anchored.

In this terrific dilemma Anson retained his wonted

steadiness and self-command. He represented to them that there was little reason to fear for the safety of the Centurion ; but, in order to provide against the worst, he advised that a Spanish bark, which they had captured, should immediately be sawn asunder, and lengthened, by an addition of twelve feet. In the vessel thus enlarged, he said, they might be able, without much difficulty, to reach the coast of China. They all immediately went to work upon her with the utmost alacrity.

The alteration of this new vessel was commenced, and it had been proceeded in for nearly three weeks, when one of the men, who had been on a hill near the spot, came running to the shore, exclaiming, in ecstasy, " The ship ! the ship !" An officer, who heard him, ran to the commodore, who was himself at work with an axe in his hand, and told him that the Centurion was in sight. He instantly threw down the axe, and gave way to the most lively emotions of delight ; and, about five o'clock on the same evening, the vessel was safely at anchor.

The Centurion was now immediately prepared for the further prosecution of the voyage ; and, when every thing was ready, the commodore and his men again went on board. She left Tinian on the twenty-first of October. In a gale of wind which afterwards overtook her, it was discovered that her rigging had become almost rotten, and that her planks separated so much as to admit an immense quantity of water. Still, however, as the men had recovered their health, and were now on their voyage homeward, neither fear nor discontent was expressed.

They had proceeded nearly to the island of Formosa, when suddenly an alarm of fire was given from the forecastle. A situation more terrific can scarcely be imagined, than that of being on board a vessel burning in the solitudes of the ocean. The sailors were in so dreadful a state of agitation and alarm, that had not the officers retained some presence of mind, the ship must inevitably have been consumed. They exerted

their authority, the men were compelled to perform their duty, and the fire was extinguished.



The *Centurion* reached the coast of China in the beginning of November, and was anchored in the port of Macao. Here she underwent a thorough repair, which occupied in the whole nearly five months; and, after she was entirely fitted and provisioned afresh, she again put to sea on the twelfth of April, 1743. Anson, undismayed by his former disasters, resolved to cruise once more in certain latitudes; under a hope of still being able to intercept one of the Spanish galleons. He informed his crew of this design; and the men instantly expressed their approbation by three cheers. It was calculated that the galleons would reach Manilla, in the month of June; and, on the last day of May, the *Centurion* arrived at the station where Anson believed he could not fail of intercepting them.

An anxious look-out was kept, day and night, till the twentieth of June, when, at sun-rise, a sail was dis-

covered. The news of this filled the whole crew with joy. It proved to be one of the expected vessels. The Centurion crowded all sail towards her; and, after an engagement, in which the Spanish ship had near seventy men killed, and upwards of eighty wounded, she struck her colours, and was taken. But at the very moment that Anson, with his companions, was exulting in this completion of their wishes, the Centurion was discovered to be dangerously on fire near the magazine. Some cartridges, blown up by accident during the engagement had communicated a flame to a parcel of oakum, and it was rapidly rising into a conflagration. In the very instant, and embrace of victory, he was thus apprized of the perishable tenure by which all human enjoyments are held. But, preserving his accustomed presence of mind, he calmly gave orders to his officers to see the fire extinguished, with the least possible alarm. This was happily accomplished, and the Centurion and her prize triumphantly returned to China.



Here he continued for some time; and, after having taken the treasure of the galleon on board the Centurion,

and amply supplied her from the shore with every requisite for the voyage, he sailed from Canton on the fifteenth of December, directly for England. The astonishing escapes from danger by which this ship had been distinguished, continued to attend her till the last: for the commodore, on entering the British Channel, found that he had actually passed through the midst of a French fleet, and that he had only been unobserved in consequence of the thickness of a fog which then happened to prevail. Had it not been for this, himself, his ship, and all his hard-earned treasure, must have been taken by the enemy.

The *Centurion* arrived at Spithead on the fifteenth of June, 1744, after an absence from England of three years and nine months.

*Mr. Allen.*—Thus terminated a very memorable expedition. Which evinced, by all its circumstances, and its happy conclusion, that prudence, bravery, and perseverance united, are capable of achieving actions which, to common minds, would appear impracticable.

*Lady Irwin.*—After the distressing outfit of this expedition, the wretched state of the crews of all the ships, the delay of sailing to such a season that there was not a possibility of its reaching the tempestuous climate of the antarctic circle, till the midst of winter; and the sufferings and loss of the crews from disease, every one must admire that talent, discretion, and conduct which, with such apparently ineffective means, were able to achieve so much as commodore Anson did.

*Edmund.*—He omitted none of the means that he considered probable to render his enterprise successful. Previously to his departure from England (among other particulars that might be adduced), he was careful to furnish himself with every possible account, both printed and manuscript, of the seas, climate, and countries he had to visit. These, on all occasions afterwards, he carefully compared with the examinations of prisoners, and the information of such intelligent persons as fell



into his hands. After his force had been weakened by the sickness and the death of great numbers of men, and by the separation or loss of the larger part of his squadron, Captain Anson was always intent upon contriving some scheme by which, if possible, the design of his expedition might be answered. Hence, when in consequence of the inefficiency of his force, no other plan was likely to be successful, he projected that of attempting to take one of the Spanish treasure-ships. In his scheme for capturing the Manilla galleon, and in the actual taking of it, he displayed united wisdom and courage.

*Frederic.*—His fortitude, and calm and collected conduct when the Centurion was driven out to sea from the uninhabited island of Tinian, and himself and part of his officers and crew were left on shore, were truly admirable. Gloomy and disconsolate as his situation was, he preserved his usual composure and steadiness. He calmly adopted every measure that was likely to support the courage of his men, and to facilitate their departure from the island. He personally engaged in the most laborious part of the work that was requisite towards the construction of a vessel for this purpose.

*Sir Charles.*—And it was only upon the pleasing and unexpected news of the return of the Centurion, that, throwing down his axe, he is said, for the first time to have been induced to break through the equable and unvaried conduct which he had hitherto preserved.

*Mr. Allen.*—Another trait in his character is deserving of remark. This was his humanity, not only towards his own men, but also to his prisoners; and particularly his generous treatment of such females as fell into his hands, and his care to prevent them from experiencing any rudeness from his sailors.

*Sir Charles.*—We must proceed, if you please, with the concluding events of his life. What, Edmund, occurred at the return of Captain Anson to England?



*Edmund.*—The fame of his exploits, and the magnified riches of his prize, rendered him greatly popular with the nation. He was promoted to the rank of a rear-admiral of the blue, and was elected a member of parliament for the borough of Heyden in Yorkshire; and before the end of the year, was appointed one of the Lords of the Admiralty.

*Frederic.*—Subsequently to this, in July 1746, he was appointed to the command of a squadron in the British Channel; and off Cape Finisterre, he encountered a French fleet of men of war and merchantmen; he immediately attacked them, and captured six sail of the line and four Indiamen.

*Mr. Allen.*—This was a splendid achievement, and it confirmed that opinion of the public, which the prudence and perseverance of the admiral in his voyage round the world had so justly raised. Do you recollect what is said to have been the remark of M. St. George, one of the French captains, on surrendering his sword to the English admiral?

*Frederic.*—Alluding to two of the ships, the *Invincible* and *Glory*, that had been taken, he said, with the characteristic gaiety of a Frenchman, “*Vous avez vaincu l’Invincible, et la Gloire vous suit.*” \*

*Edmund.*—For this important service to his country, Admiral Anson was created a peer of the realm, by the title of Lord Anson; and a few years afterwards, was successively appointed Vice Admiral of England, and First Lord of the Admiralty.

*Mr. Allen.*—In the latter situation he was much censured by the party writers of the time, on account of his conduct relative to Admiral Byng, and the loss of the island of Minorca, in the year 1756. But when that subject came to be publicly investigated, he received an honourable acquittal.

*Frederic.*—Yet he resigned his situation in the same year.

\* “You have conquered the *Invincible*, and *Glory* attends you.”

*Edmund.*—He did so; but he was, not long afterwards, reinstated, and he continued to fill it, with honour to himself, and with advantage to his country, during the remainder of his life. In July 1761, he was raised to the dignity of Admiral-in-chief of the Fleet; and the same year had the honour of conducting her late majesty, Queen Charlotte, to England.

*Lady Irwin.*—Was not the death of Lord Anson occasioned by a cold which he caught during his voyage with the queen?

*Frederic.*—No, madam. In the following year he went to Portsmouth, to shew the queen's brother, Prince Charles of Mecklenburgh, the fleet that was preparing to sail with Sir George Pocock against the Havannah; and it was during this visit that he caught a violent cold, which at length settled upon his lungs and terminated in his death. This event took place at his seat called Moor Park, in Hertfordshire, on the sixth of June, 1762, and in the sixty-sixth year of his age.

*Louisa.*—Was he ever married?

*Frederic.*—Yes, to Elizabeth, the eldest daughter of Philip Lord Hardwicke, then Lord High Chancellor of Great Britain, but he left no children.

*Sir Charles.*—Lord Anson is described to have been, and I think the narrative that Edmund has read to us has shewn him to have been, remarkable for the coolness and equanimity of his temper. Amid all the dangers and the successes which he experienced in his circumnavigation of the globe, he is said never to have expressed any strong emotion either of joy or sorrow, except when the Centurion hove in sight off the island of Tinian. He was also a man of few words, so much so as to have been considered singularly silent, even in a country which has never been distinguished by loquacity. When we speak of him as a seaman, it must be remarked that he introduced into the English navy a discipline almost unknown before, and revived that bold and close method of fighting at pistol-shot, which

Blake and Shovel had so successfully practised, and which has created in the breasts of British sailors a daring courage and unconquerable intrepidity, which anticipate and almost secure success even to the most hazardous enterprises.

---

## ELEVENTH EVENING.

*Sir Charles.*—What have we for discussion to-night, Frederic?

*Frederic.*—The life of the Honourable JOHN BYRON, an admiral in the British navy. I have prepared narratives of his shipwreck in the *Wager*, and of his voyage round the world.

*Sir Charles.*—These, I fear, will occupy a greater length of time than we can conveniently appropriate to them in one evening. Suppose we terminate the present evening with the narrative of his shipwreck.

*Frederic.*—If you please, sir. We can easily resume and finish his life to-morrow.

*Mr. Allen.*—In the early history of Admiral Byron, few circumstances have been recorded, which are not to be found in his own memoir relative to the shipwreck of the *Wager*.

*Frederic.*—He was the second son of William, fourth Lord Byron, and born in the month of November, 1723.

*Sir Charles.*—Few families in the British peerage can boast a more illustrious descent than that of the Byrons; and, what is peculiarly deserving of remark, there is a French, as well as an English branch, which have attained nearly equal celebrity.

*Louisa.*—Was the late Lord Byron, some of whose poetry I have read with great delight, a descendant of this family?

*Sir Charles.*—He was the grandson of Admiral Byron. His predecessor died in 1798, without male issue, and his title and estates descended to the late lord, who was his great nephew.

*Frederic.*—Mr. Byron entered the navy so young that he was appointed a midshipman when only eight years of age ; and, before he was eleven, he had made several voyages. He accompanied the squadron which, according to Edmund's narrative of last night, sailed under the command of Commodore Anson, for the purpose of cruising against the Spaniards in the South Seas.

*Louisa.*—In what ship did he sail ?

*Frederic.*—In the *Wager*, a vessel carrying twenty-eight guns, and having a crew of a hundred and sixty men. She was at first commanded by Captain Murray, and afterwards by Captain Cheap. Mr. Byron was not at this time quite seventeen years of age.

*Mr. Allen.*—And little did he imagine to what dangers, hardships, and excessive deprivations he was about to be exposed.

*Frederic.*—I will, if you please, proceed with my narration of them.

NARRATIVE OF THE SHIPWRECK OF THE WAGER, AND OF  
THE ADVENTURES OF THE HONOURABLE JOHN BYRON,  
IN HIS RETURN TO ENGLAND.

COMMODORE Anson's squadron, as Edmund last night informed us, sailed from Spithead in the month of September, 1740. Nothing very remarkable occurred till the ships had nearly reached the southern extremity of the Strait of Le Maire ; a tremendous storm then came on, and the *Wager*, being the sternmost ship, was nearly wrecked upon the rocks of Staten Island. Scarcely had she escaped from this danger, than a heavy sea broke over her, and threw her mizen-mast overboard. A subsequent wave nearly filled her with water. Thus shattered, she was unable to continue with the rest of the

squadron, and was consequently left alone. She passed Cape Horn, and proceeded in a northerly direction for some days afterward. At length she was observed to be driving fast towards the shore. All her men, except twelve, were sick, and unfit for duty. The waves were raging in dreadful breakers on every side; the sails were tearing from the yards; and the rigging was damaged beyond any possibility, under such circumstances, of being repaired.

Night came on, and it was a night dreadful beyond description. About four o'clock in the morning of Friday the fifteenth of May, 1741, she struck upon a rock, and shortly afterwards struck a second time, and so violently, that she was thrown on one side, and the sea broke completely over her. Every one who could move was presently on deck; but several who had not strength to get out of their hammocks were drowned in them.



In this dreadful situation the ship continued for some little time, every man on board considering the present

minute as his last. A tremendous wave bore her from this perilous station ; but she presently struck again.

The effects of terror on the minds of some of the crew were most extraordinary. One man, in particular, bereft by it of his senses, imagined himself the king of the country on which the ship was foundering ; he stalked about the deck, flourishing a cutlass over his head, and striking every one he came near ; till his companions, to rid themselves of his tyranny, knocked him down. Others became senseless, and, like inanimate logs, rolled about the ship, without exerting any efforts whatever to help themselves. One of the bravest men on board was so dismayed by the horror of the scene, that he exclaimed it was " too shocking a sight to bear," and would have thrown himself into the sea had he not been prevented. Others, however, preserved the most heroic self-possession. The man at the helm was an instance of this, beyond almost the highest conceptions of the dignity of human courage. Though the rudder was broken off, he kept his station, because he had not been ordered to quit it ; and when one of the officers, seeing him there, inquired if the ship would steer, he replied with as much respect and coolness as if they had been in the greatest safety, that it would not. Being then ordered to quit the helm, he immediately applied himself to his duty elsewhere, as if nothing extraordinary had happened ; saying it did not become him to desert the ship so long as she would hold together. Mr. Jones, one of the mates, who survived the wreck many years, endeavoured to inspire those around him with resolution equal to his own : " My friends," said he, " let us not be discouraged : did you never see a ship amongst breakers before ? Let us endeavour to push through them ; come, lend a hand : I doubt not but we may cast her near enough the land to save our lives !" His spirit operated strongly on the minds of others ; but he often afterwards confessed, that he had not himself the slightest hope.



The ship was carried still onward, and at length stuck fast between two great rocks, where she was in some measure sheltered from the violence of the sea. Her main and foremast were then cut away, and it was imagined she could not long hold together. All this had occurred during the darkness of the night. The day now broke, and land was seen not far distant. Nothing was now thought of by the crew but how they could save their lives.

From the moment there was any prospect of this, the men became possessed by a riotous exhilaration, as excessive as their former despair. They broke open the chests and boxes, and stove in the heads of the casks of wine and brandy ; and many became intoxicated, and in that state were drowned. Others, drunk or mad with liquor, plundered the chests and cabins of money and other valuables, and clothed themselves in the richest apparel they could find ; imagining that every thing was



now their property. The prospect, on landing, seemed not less dismal than the dangers from which they had escaped. The country was perfectly desolate : the mid-winter of this dreary climate was nearly at hand ; and

all the subsistence the crew could hope to obtain was from the wreck, which, every instant, they expected would fall asunder.

After reaching the shore, and looking around them, they discovered an Indian hut, at a little distance in the woods. As many as possible crowded into it, without distinction of rank: others sought for shelter under a tree; for the rain began to fall in torrents, and the night again closed in black and tempestuous. When the light returned, it was found that one of the lieutenants had died in the hut, and that two of the men who had taken shelter under the tree were also dead.

The survivors had now fasted eight and forty hours; and all the provisions that could be mustered, for about a hundred and forty men, consisted of little more than three pounds weight of biscuit, one sea-gull, which they had happened to kill, and a small quantity of wild celery, which they had gathered. With these a kind of soup was made.

The spot on which they had landed was a bay, formed by two hilly promontories. One of these was so steep that, to ascend it, they were obliged to cut steps: hence they gave it the emphatic name of Mount Misery. The other promontory was more accessible; and beyond it, Byron and some others went in quest of shell-fish, but could find none. For several days after their escape from the wreck, the misery and distress that occurred sicken the imagination with horror. Their hunger became so intense, that the common feelings of human nature began to give way to the cravings of an hideous appetite. They even killed and devoured the birds of prey that were found feeding upon the dead bodies of their companions. Murders were perpetrated without compunction. Some of the men vented their discontent in mutinous murmurs: others strayed sullenly into the woods, without motive, without hope, and incited only by the horrors of despair.

Mr. Byron himself was infected with this moral

disease, and, retiring from the huts which, by this time, had been constructed on the shore, near the wreck, he built a habitation for himself, and abstained from all society, except that of a wild dog, which he had met with in the woods, and which had voluntarily attached itself to him. But such was the pressure of famine, that he was not long allowed to enjoy the silent fellowship of this voluntary companion. A party of the men came to his hut, and compelled him to give up the dog. This he did ; they immediately killed the animal ; and so great, at the time, was his own hunger, that although he felt the loss of this faithful creature almost as he would have done the death of a friend, he was glad to participate of the feast that was prepared by the sailors of his body.

The incessant rains and intensely cold weather which prevailed, rendered it impossible for these unfortunate men to live without shelter ; consequently the gunner, the carpenter, and some others, having dragged on shore the largest of the ship's boats, turned it keel upward, and fixing it upon props, made of it the roof of a house, which, when finished, proved no despicable habitation.

When they had been here about ten days, three Indians came on shore from a canoe. Shocked at the sight of so much distress, they went away, and after a while returned with three sheep and two or three dogs, which they gave up to the famished seamen. They came a third time, accompanied by a great number of others, together with their wives and children, intending to settle there ; but some of the sailors having ill-used their wives, they went entirely away.

When the violence of the weather had in some degree abated, a considerable stock of provisions was, after great labour and difficulty, obtained from the wreck.

The land on which these unfortunate men were now settled, was situated about ninety leagues northward of the western outlet of the Straits of Magellan, and betwixt 47 and 48 degrees of south latitude ; but

whether it was an island, or part of the western coast of the continent of South America, it was impossible at that time to ascertain. Afterwards, however, it was found to be an island situated four or five leagues from the main. It has since been called Wager Island.

Projects for their escape were formed. The most probable of these was to saw the ship's long boat in two, and to lengthen her, so as to allow room for all who were inclined to go off in her to do so. This project was acted upon. The work was commenced on the seventeenth of June, and all who could be spared from the more immediate task of procuring sustenance, were employed in fitting and shaping timber for the new vessel, according to the directions of the carpenter. The number of men was by this time reduced from a hundred and forty-five, to a hundred.

One night, when Byron and four of the men were sleeping by a fire, in an old Indian hut, one of them was disturbed by something breathing in his face; and, on opening his eyes, he was not a little alarmed to see, by the glittering of the fire, a large beast standing over him. He had presence of mind enough to snatch a brand from the fire, and thrust it at the nose of the animal; and the creature immediately ran away. This done, the man awoke his companions, and related, with horror in his countenance, the account of his narrow escape from being devoured. Notwithstanding their dread of another visit from this beast, fatigue overcame their fears: they again laid down, and they slept through the remainder of the night, without disturbance.

Those who had survived the wreck, and the inclemencies of an antarctic winter, on an almost desolate island, had continued there nearly five months, during which they had suffered almost incredible hardships and fatigues; when, on the fourteenth of October, the long-boat was completed and launched. Such stores and other necessities as could be obtained were then placed on board this vessel, and also in the ship's cutter and barge. These

were all ready, and preparations were making for going on board, when about seventy of the men suddenly seized upon the long-boat and cutter, and sailed away, leaving Captain Cheap, Mr. Byron, and several others, on the island. Their situation was now become extremely desperate; their only hope of escape depending upon the barge, and another boat called the yawl, which were still left. These they immediately began to prepare for sea; and two months expired before they were ready. The only stores they had left were three casks of beef that had been obtained from the wreck, and a few barrels of water.

The captain, the surgeon, and Mr. Byron, with nine others, went on board the barge; and Lieutenant Hamilton, and a Mr. Campbell, with six men, embarked in the yawl. In these frail vessels they left the island on the fifteenth of December, about midsummer in this climate, and seven months after the commencement of their residence on it.

They had not been two hours at sea before the wind shifted, and began to blow very hard. The sea was so rough that, in both the boats, the men were obliged to sit as close as possible, that they might receive the whole force of the waves on their backs; and thus prevent the vessels from being filled and sunk. They were also compelled to throw overboard almost every thing that was moveable, even their anchor, and the whole of their beef. After this they had for several successive days to suffer the utmost extremities of hunger; so that they were compelled to eat even the leather of their shoes.

This was but the commencement of a new series of misfortunes. The yawl was sunk in the surf near the American shore. As it was impossible to take all her crew on board the barge, it was absolutely necessary to land four marines on a desert coast, and leave them behind. The captain distributed to them arms and ammunition, and some other necessities. These poor men objected but little to their fate. They said that they

knew that they were soldiers, "whose business it was to die," and they submitted to the sacrifice of themselves with a greatness of courage truly heroic. As the boat rowed away from them, they stood on the beach, and giving three cheers to their departing friends, cried, "God bless the king!"

The boat was rowed along the coast: and the men were compelled to subsist on shell-fish, and sea-weeds, which they picked up among the rocks; their spirits sunk to the lowest pitch of despondency. For more than thirty days it rained so incessantly that they were wet through all their clothes the whole time; and, after exertions almost beyond human strength, they found themselves, at the end of about two months, driven into the very bay whence they first took their departure. Their condition at this time can only be imagined. To the common distress of men just saved from shipwreck, they added the effects of a terrible recollection of sufferings which they had endured from the time of their first landing.

Their provisions were entirely consumed; no others could possibly be expected from the wreck, which was now completely broken up; and that last and most horrible resource of the starving, began to suggest itself to their minds; they believed that the time would shortly arrive, when they must cast lots to decide who should first be slain for the support of his surviving companions. From this hideous expedient for protracting existence they were, however, happily preserved.

Not long after their re-arrival at Mount Misery, two canoes, containing a party of Indians, approached them. One of these spoke, though very imperfectly, the Spanish language; and they prevailed with him to conduct them towards the nearest Spanish settlement. Once more they bade adieu to the Bay of Misery. In the evening of the second day after their departure, they came to a strong flowing river. This they attempted to ascend; and, whilst rowing against the torrent, two of the men



dropped down at the oar, and died of fatigue. After a vain attempt to proceed further, they landed on the coast to search for a little food ; and, at their return, six of the men, accompanied by their Indian conductor, having advanced a few paces before the officers, got into the boat, and pushed her off, leaving the captain, Mr. Byron, and the rest on shore.

This they contemplated as the perfecting of their misery ; but it was one of those instances of apparent evil, by which Providence brings about the most unexpected good. Mr. Byron, almost partaking of that despair which was operating strongly upon the minds of his companions, as he sauntered along the beach, looking towards the sea, without the comfort of any hope, descried at a great distance something black approaching. He anxiously watched it for some time, and, at last, to his indescribable delight it proved to be a canoe. He ran to his companions, and acquainted them with what he had seen ; but they were so sunk in despondency that they scarcely gave any attention to the intelligence. As soon, however, as they were convinced of its truth, they eagerly stripped themselves of their rags to make a signal for the canoe, and happily succeeded in bringing it towards the place where they were stationed.

Without much difficulty they prevailed with the owners of the canoe to take them on board, with the intention of their being put on shore in some place whence they might hope to reach one of the nearest Spanish settlements. They rowed hard all that day and the next, without any thing to eat, except a morsel of seal's flesh, which was given to them by their new companions. On the following day they landed ; and, about two hours after it was dark, they arrived at a place where there were six or seven Indian huts. Captain Cheap was conducted into one of these, but poor Byron was compelled to remain on the outside. Thus left, he was, for some time, at a loss what to do. He was fearful of intruding upon the Indians ; but the united sufferings of hunger and fatigue, and these of no

common kind, determined him to attempt it; crawling therefore upon his hands and knees, through a door-way not three feet high, he obtruded himself into an adjacent hut. Here he found two Indian women sitting at a fire made in the middle of the hut, and in the midst of smoke which had no outlet except the door. Perceiving the wet, cold, and deplorable condition he was in, they received him kindly, put more wood on the fire, and broiled him a piece of fish to eat, which he devoured with a most ravenous appetite. He was desirous of more, but they had no more. They then strewed some dry boughs on the ground, and made signs for him to lie down and sleep.

After encountering many subsequent adventures, in which he was ill treated by the male Indians, and almost invariably treated with kindness by the females; after almost incredible sufferings, sometimes in stemming the torrents of rapid rivers in canoes, and sometimes in traversing the most rugged and desolate countries; his feet torn by briars, and by the stumps of trees and shrubs concealed in swamps through which he had to wade; his clothes in rags, and, unavoidably, almost alive with vermin, Mr. Byron and his party, under the conduct of one of the Indians, reached an island where they were received with great hospitality by the inhabitants. There seemed no limit to the kindness of this people. They spread skins for the beds of the strangers, killed a sheep, made them broth, and baked bread for them; all of which were luxuries they had long been deprived of. This was at night: in the morning the women of the neighbourhood, having received some report of their sufferings from the man who had been their guide, brought them an abundant supply of provisions. In the following evening the men brought them a liquor which was not much unlike ale, and which refreshed and invigorated their spirits. They also sent a messenger to the magistrate of the Spanish town of Castro on the island of Chiloe, which was not far distant, to inform him of their arrival.

In about three days the messenger returned with an

order that the strangers should be conducted to a certain place, where a party of soldiers would be ready to receive them. The hospitable Indians were much concerned, when they heard of this design to make them prisoners; and, if they could have done it, would have detained or concealed them. Finding this to be impossible, they conducted them to the place appointed. Here great crowds of people came to gaze at them; but the compassionate Indian women never came empty-handed. From this place they were conducted to Castro, and afterwards to Valparaiso, a town on the continent of America. Here they arrived about the fifth of January, 1742-3, and they were immediately committed, by the Spanish governor, to a dungeon.

In a few days Captain Cheap and Lieutenant Hamilton were sent to St. Jago, the capital of Chili, and Campbell and Byron were left in prison at Valparaiso. Tormented by vermin, with which their dungeon swarmed, and having only a miserable pittance allowed for their support, they suffered in this prison the greatest distress. The inhumanity of the governor, however, excited some commiseration for their fate in the minds of the people; and money was given to them by many of the inhabitants. A private Spanish soldier, who had a wife and six children, laid aside daily the half of his pay, to provide them with comforts; and that even without the least hope of recompence. But Mr. Byron, about two years afterwards, had it in his power to make some return to this poor man for his generosity.

Orders were next given that Byron and Campbell should also be sent from Valparaiso to St. Jago. The distance was about ninety miles; and they were conducted on foot by muleteers, men who are employed to convey goods betwixt the two towns. When they arrived, they were placed in a comfortable residence, where they found their two companions; and they were treated with as much kindness and attention as their situation required.

Mr. Byron continued at St. Jago about two years. On the twentieth of December, 1744, he embarked, with Captain Cheap and Mr. Hamilton, on board a frigate for France. After a long and dangerous passage by Cape Horn, they arrived at Brest; and, in the month of November following, were landed at Dover.

When Byron arrived in London he was entirely destitute of money; and indeed, during the greater part of his journey from Dover, he had been unable to obtain any refreshment. On reaching Marlborough-street, where his friends had lived, he found the house shut up. He knew not where to go, nor even how to pay the hackney-coachman, whose carriage he had hired in the Borough. He, however, recollected a linen-draper's shop, at which his family had formerly dealt. Here he obtained a sufficient sum to discharge the coach; and received information that his sister had been married to Lord Carlisle, and resided in Soho-square. Thither he immediately walked; but, on knocking, the porter did not like his appearance (which was half French and half Spanish, with a large pair of boots covered with dirt), and was about to shut the door in his face. After some persuasion, however, he allowed him to enter; and Mr. Byron was received, with surprise and delight, by his sister, who had long imagined him to have been dead.

*Mr. Allen.*—The family of Mr. Byron had every reason to suppose him dead, for the squadron with which he had sailed had left England more than five years before; and it was well known that the *Wager* had been wrecked on some inhospitable land in the South Sea.

*Sir Charles.*—The gunner, the carpenter, and the cooper of the *Wager*, were among those who had escaped in the long-boat. They arrived in England in January, 1742; and in a narrative which they published, they appear to have related nearly all they knew concerning the fate of their companions.

*Frederic.*—I have seen it, Sir; and have extracted from it a few of the facts that I have just read to you;

but it is by no means either so curious or so interesting as the narrative which was subsequently published by Mr. Byron himself.

*Lady Irwin.*—After the mismanagement that attended the fitting out of the squadron with which Mr. Byron sailed, it is impossible to be much surprised at the subsequent loss or destruction of the vessels.

*Frederic.*—That mismanagement was in no respect so evident as in the case of the *Wager*. She was an old Indiaman, that had been deemed unfit for the purposes of trade; and, consequently, was ill adapted for the king's service, and for equipment as a man of war.

*Louisa.*—How absurd then to have sent such a vessel on so perilous a voyage!

*Frederic.*—But this was not all. She was appointed to carry out the military and naval stores for the rest of the squadron; in addition to which she was crowded with bale goods and merchandise.

*Sir Charles.*—Thus it was not sufficient that the expedition should be ostensibly prepared for extensive military action, but that it should also be made to combine commercial purposes for the benefit of private persons; two things which were certainly incompatible.

*Mr. Allen.*—The least consideration might have convinced the projectors of this expedition, that such a vessel as the *Wager*, so manned and stowed as she was, was wholly incapable of traversing the stormy and almost unexplored ocean of the antarctic circle, and of accomplishing successfully her part in the arduous undertaking for which she was appointed.

*Louisa.*—I should think that no horrors can have been more deplorable than those experienced by the wretched men who, with Mr. Byron, escaped to the shore after the wreck of this unfortunate vessel.

*Frederic.*—The season at which the occurrence took place was near the middle of winter: the climate was inhospitable in the extreme: the island on which they landed was uninhabited and nearly desolate; even in

summer affording neither fruits, grain, nor roots, that were proper for the sustenance of man: and what rendered their situation still more distressing, the sea, which yields a plentiful support to many a barren coast, was found, on this tempestuous shore, to be almost as barren as the land. It is consequently not easy to imagine a situation so dreadful as theirs.

*Sir Charles.*—Under such circumstances it is impossible not to admire the fortitude and patient perseverance of Mr. Byron through all his disasters. His mind indeed appears to have been peculiarly constituted to endure hardships; and the self-possession which he evinced, in the midst of danger, has perhaps never been exceeded.



## TWELFTH EVENING.

*Frederic.*—After the return of Mr. Byron to England, he was promoted to the rank of captain, and appointed to command the Syren frigate. He had a subsequent command in the fleet under Commodore Buckle, and also in an unsuccessful expedition against Rochfort, under Sir Edward Hawke, in 1757.

*Edmund.*—He appears hitherto to have been unfortunate in most of his enterprises: but, in 1760, when stationed off the coast of America, with the fleet under Lord Colville, he had an opportunity, which he did not neglect, of rendering considerable service to his country. Lord Colville having received intelligence that a French squadron, with troops and stores on board, was in one of the bays in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, despatched Captain Byron with three ships in quest of them. After having experienced some difficulty in approaching them, on account of their being far up the bay, he completely accomplished his object, by destroying the whole squadron, consisting of three frigates and twenty smaller vessels.



*Mr. Allen.*—By this victory he frustrated the last attempt that the French made to obtain possession of Quebec, the capital of Canada; a country which had formerly been in their hands. But Captain Byron was shortly afterwards employed on a more extensive service than this.

*Louisa.*—I presume, Sir, you allude to his voyage round the world. I shall be very glad to hear some account of it.

*Mr. Allen.*—Frederic will read to us his abstract of this voyage.

It is, however, requisite previously to observe, that when his late majesty came to the throne, it was one of his first designs to promote the sending out of vessels for making discoveries of countries then unknown; and, in the year 1764, the kingdom being in a state of profound peace, he proceeded to put this design into execution. Two ships, the *Dolphin*, a man of war mounting twenty-four guns, and the *Tamar*, a sloop mounting sixteen guns, were prepared for a voyage to the Pacific Ocean. The command of the former vessel was given to Captain Byron, and of the latter to Captain Mouat; and the whole number of men employed was two hundred and forty; a hundred and fifty in the *Dolphin*, and ninety in the *Tamar*.

*Lady Irwin.*—What was the specific object of the voyage?

*Frederic.*—To ascertain whether there were any islands lying in the Pacific Ocean, between the southern tropic and the equator.

#### NARRATIVE OF BYRON'S VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

THE *Dolphin* and *Tamar* sailed from Plymouth on the third of July, 1764, and ten days afterwards arrived at the island of Madeira, where they took in a supply of water and provisions. They afterwards touched at the Canaries, and the Cape de Verd islands; and on the

thirteenth of September they arrived at Rio de Janeiro, on the coast of Brazil. After continuing there somewhat more than a month, they proceeded southward toward the Straits of Magellan; the navigation of which the commodore had directions to ascertain in a very particular manner.

A remarkable instance occurred to these vessels of an illusive phenomenon at sea, which seamen call "Cape Fly-away." Several of the men exclaimed "Land right a-head!" The commodore looked forward, and saw what appeared to be an island, rising in two craggy hills, with a long extent of low land adjoining. Some of the officers looked out from the mast-head, and they declared that they saw the land very distinctly. As the ships approached this unexpected land, the sailors even imagined that they saw the waves breaking on the sandy beach. But after having contemplated the scene for upwards of an hour, the apparent land suddenly vanished. They had been deceived by a distant fog.

On the ensuing day the weather was extremely fine till about four o'clock in the afternoon, when suddenly the wind shifted, and the sky to windward became pitch-dark. In a few minutes there was a sudden and unusual noise, like the rolling of heavy waves upon the sea-shore. This was occasioned by the sea rushing in vast billows covered with foam, toward the ships, and in such fury as nearly to overwhelm them. All this was accompanied by an immense flight of sea-birds of different kinds, which were flying and screaming before the tempest in a most terrific manner. The ships, however, suffered no injury; and nothing very particular afterwards occurred till they reached Patagonia. Here they were anchored in a bay not far from the entrance of the Straits of Magellan.

On the shore of this bay were collected about five hundred of the inhabitants, some of whom were on foot, but the greater number on horseback. The commodore describes them to have been a people of gigantic stature;



though some doubts have been entertained respecting the correctness of his description. When the commodore landed, the Patagonian chief approached him. This man, he says, was about seven feet high, wore the skin of a wild beast thrown over his shoulders, was painted with a double circle of white and black round each eye, and the other parts of his face were streaked with different colours. These people were greatly delighted with the toys that were given to them by the English; were exceedingly gentle; and appeared to possess none of the ferocious propensities of savage nations.

The ships now left the coast of Patagonia, and entered the Straits of Magellan. Here the commodore intended, for the present, only to obtain a supply of wood and water, previously to his exploring the coast of the Falkland islands. He describes the northern shore of the Straits at this season (the middle of December, or midsummer in southern climates), as exhibiting one of

the most beautiful countries he had ever beheld. The soil was richly fertile; the ground was covered with flowers of delightful fragrance, and the shrubs that had shed their blossoms were thickly clustered with fruit. Hundreds of birds of uncommon beauty were seen feeding; and there was a plentiful supply of delicious water.

As soon as he had completed the wooding and watering, the commodore returned out of the Straits to examine the Falkland Islands, which his instructions from England had directed him to do. Although much of the shore of these islands was rocky and dangerous in the extreme, he discovered some excellent harbours, particularly one of such extent, that he says the whole navy of England might have found sufficient space in it, and have been perfectly sheltered from every wind that could blow. This harbour the commodore named Port Egmont, in honour of the Earl of Egmont, who was then the First Lord of the Admiralty.

On every part of the shore the crews of the *Dolphin* and *Tamar* found fresh water in the greatest abundance; and such numbers of geese, ducks, snipes, and other birds, that the men were soon tired of eating them. It was no uncommon circumstance for a ship's boat to bring off sixty or seventy geese, without the expenditure of a single charge of powder and shot; for the men had no difficulty in knocking down as many of them as they pleased with stones. They also obtained several kinds of useful vegetables; and had an abundant supply of muscles, cockles, and other shell-fish. The seals and penguins were so numerous, that it was impossible to walk upon the beach without first driving them away; and the coast abounded with sea-lions, an enormously large species of seals. These animals were very formidable. The commodore was unexpectedly attacked by one of them, and it was with the utmost difficulty he could escape from it; and the crew of the *Dolphin* had a fine mastiff dog, which one of these creatures tore almost to pieces.

The ships continued in this bay about a fortnight ; and, having afterwards examined other parts of the Falkland islands, they returned to the Straits of Magellan. In their course thither, the number of whales which at different times surrounded them, was so great as even to render the navigation dangerous. The Dolphin was very near striking upon one of them ; and another blew the water out of the spiracles or breathing holes on the top of his head, upon the quarter-deck of that vessel.

They occupied seven weeks and two days in passing the Straits ; and during this time had not one man sick, although the passage was not effected without great hardship, and almost incessant fatigue. Nothing peculiarly deserving of remark took place during their progress, unless we may consider as such an occurrence with seven or eight Indians, who came to them in a canoe. Some of the sailors were cutting grass on shore for two or three sheep which were still left on board. These Indians, perceiving what the men were about, ran immediately, and tearing up all the weeds they could get, carried them to the boat, and in a short time nearly filled it. When the men returned on board the boat, the Indians all got into their canoe, and followed them. As soon, however, as they came near the ship, they stopped and gazed at her, as if held in suspense by a mixture of astonishment and terror. At last, though not without some difficulty, four or five of them were prevailed with to venture on board. They soon appeared to be perfectly at ease. As the commodore was very desirous to entertain them, he made them several presents, and desired one of the midshipmen to play on the violin, while some of the sailors danced. At this they were so much delighted, and so impatient to show their gratitude, that one of them went over the ship's side to his canoe ; and having fetched up a seal-skin bag filled with red paint, immediately smeared the fiddler's face all over. He was very desirous of paying

the same compliment to the commodore; but the latter thought fit to decline it. The good-natured Indian made many vigorous efforts to get the better of the commodore's modesty; and it was not without some difficulty that he defended himself from receiving the intended honour even in his own despite. After these people had been entertained for several hours, they were at last requested to go on shore; but they did not leave the ship without expressions of great regret.

The commodore, after he had cleared the Straits, proceeded with his ships to Masafuero, an island which is situated westward of Juan Fernandez. Here he proposed to lay in a stock of wood and water; but as the shore was rocky and dangerous, only some of the men could be conveyed thither in the boats: others were obliged to swim ashore. The latter were exposed to great peril from the multitude of enormous sharks which were constantly swimming about the ship. One of these, upwards of twenty feet in length, came close to one of the boats, and, having seized a large seal, swallowed it at a mouthful. When every thing was ready, the commodore was informed that one of the seamen, who could not swim, was still on shore, and that the sea being so rough that no boat could reach the land in safety, he could not be prevailed with to venture to the ship, under the guidance of men who could swim. Dreadful as the alternative was, he preferred rather to be left alone on this uninhabited island. Every effort was made to prevail with him, but to no purpose. He took an affectionate leave of his comrades; and, just as the boat which had approached as near to the shore as it could with safety, was about to return, one of the midshipmen took a rope in his hand, jumped into the sea, and swam through the surf to the beach. He expostulated with the man on his folly, and having in the mean time, made a running knot on his rope, he dexterously threw it round the man's body, calling out to his companions, who had hold of the other end, to haul away. They



did so : the disconsolate seaman was dragged through the surf, into the boat ; and thus saved in spite of himself.

Commodore Byron proceeded in a north-westerly direction from the island of Masafuero ; and in the fourteenth degree of south latitude, and in longitude one hundred and forty-four degrees west, he discovered a cluster of islands. These he named the Isles of Disappointment, in consequence of their having appeared to produce the most luxuriant vegetation, and yet, although inhabited, to have afforded no place whatever sufficiently secure for the ships to come to anchor and the men to land. The crews of both ships were in the meantime suffering greatly from sickness and deprivation.

Two days afterward he discovered another cluster of islands, to which he gave the name of King George's Islands. These appeared full of cocoa-nut and other trees, and were surrounded with a rock of red coral. The natives, who were very numerous, and armed with long spears, exhibited the most threatening and ferocious gestures. As the boat approached the shore, one of them got into it, seized a seaman's jacket, in an instant dived with it into the water, and was no more seen till he arrived close to the shore, among his companions. Another got hold of a midshipman's hat, but, not knowing how to take it off, he pulled it downward instead of lifting it up ; otherwise it would have disappeared as quickly as the jacket.

Without attempting to ascertain whether these islands were not, as might naturally have been supposed, and as they were afterwards discovered by Captain Cook and other navigators to be, part of an extensive cluster of islands, some of them of large size, Commodore Byron, after having obtained from one of them a small supply of cocoa-nuts and water, proceeded on his voyage ; assigning as a reason, that the sickness of his men was an insuperable impediment to his continuing longer on so distant a station.

On the day after he left King George's Islands, he, however, discovered another cluster about eighty-four leagues eastward of them. These he named Prince of Wales's Islands. They also appeared to be populously inhabited, and were more fertile and beautiful than any of the others.

He now steered his course for the Ladrões Islands, and anchored near the island of Tinian, on the thirty-first of July. Hitherto his ships had not lost a single man, although they had of late suffered much by the scurvy. Two men, however, died at Tinian. This island Captain Byron describes to have been then very hot and unhealthy. He, however, continued there about two months, and during this time obtained a supply of water, and several kinds of fruit in great abundance, particularly bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, oranges, and limes. The men also killed many kinds of birds, some wild cattle, and hogs. As soon as the invalids were nearly all recovered, the vessel departed, and proceeded to the Bashee Islands; and thence to Batavia, where they arrived on the twenty-eighth of December. On the twelfth of February they were at the Cape of Good Hope, and, without any very important circumstance in the meantime occurring, they arrived in England on the ninth of May, 1766, after an absence of little more than a year and ten months.

*Sir Charles.*—Although Captain Byron had been sent on a voyage of discovery, and under circumstances, and with an equipment, infinitely more favourable to such a voyage than those of the squadron in which he had previously sailed, yet it cannot justly be said that he has added any thing of importance to the knowledge which was previously possessed.

*Frederic.*—And yet, sir, in all the ordinary qualities of an officer, he appears to have been in no respect inferior to the greatest navigators.

*Mr. Allen.*—Perhaps the inhospitable treatment he

received from many of the Indians, whom he had seen after his escape from the wreck of the *Wager*, may have left an impression on his mind averse to the cultivation of any intercourse with savages.

*Sir Charles*.—If such were the case, that knowledge of savage life, which might have been considered as qualifying him the better for commanding an expedition of discovery, was a means of defeating one of the chief objects which the projectors of the expedition had in view.

*Edmund*.—And yet, sir, the discoveries that he made were such as to lead to the despatch of Captains Wallis and Carteret, shortly afterwards, into the Pacific Ocean.

*Mr. Allen*.—Captain Byron certainly ascertained the existence of some important clusters of islands in that ocean; but he did little more than this. He left to subsequent navigators, and especially to Captain Cook, to acquire all those particulars relative to their situation, productions, and inhabitants, which have rendered the account of his voyages so extremely interesting as we find it.

*Frederic*.—I will proceed with his history. In 1769 Captain Byron was appointed governor of Newfoundland. This situation he held about six years; and he was afterwards elevated to the rank of admiral.

*Edmund*.—He was appointed, in 1778, to the command of a large squadron, and despatched to America to oppose a French fleet of twelve ships of the line, besides frigates and transports, commanded by Count D'Estaing. In the equipment of this squadron so much delay occurred, as to give the French fleet considerable advantage in escaping from it; and when Admiral Byron at last put to sea he had the misfortune to encounter adverse winds, and his fleet was dispersed in a storm. Discouraging as this was to him, it was exceeded by the mortification which he subsequently experienced on the American coast. He discovered the French fleet, but it was now too late. He was nearly alone, and was

compelled to seek for safety in flight. He consequently sailed for Halifax, where he found one of his ships had already arrived ; and the rest of his squadron afterwards came in one by one, with sickly crews and damaged rigging.

*Sir Charles.*—Nothing can more clearly demonstrate the little control which a man has over the circumstances in which he is sometimes necessitated to act, than the various facts that have been recorded of Admiral Byron. Though a man of undisputed courage and conduct, it has been remarked, that “he was ever a day too soon, or a day too late ; or he sprung his mast in a chase, or he lost his prize in a fog ; or he fell in with a wane of wind which his enemy had passed ; or some disaster or other.” The wind and waves were indeed considered, by his nautical brethren, to be so uniformly hostile to him, that they emphatically denominated him Foul-weather Jack.

*Frederic.*—At length, disgusted by various adverse occurrences, Admiral Byron retired from the service. He was, however, raised to the rank of Vice-admiral of the White in 1779 ; and, on the tenth of April, 1786, he died, in the seventy-third year of his age.

*Mr. Allen.*—It cannot be denied that he was an officer of great talent and respectability ; and, though his exertions often failed of their merited success, their failure was never attributed either to want of skill, of bravery, or perseverance. He served his country, with undoubted courage, in every quarter of the world for forty-five years ; and, during that time, was beloved and esteemed for the excellent qualities of his heart, and for the kindness and humanity which he always showed towards those who were placed under his command.

## THIRTEENTH EVENING.

It was remarked by Frederic Montagu to be a singular circumstance that, although the voyages of Captains Wallis and Carteret round the world had obtained considerable celebrity, neither himself nor his friend Edmund had hitherto been able to discover any memoir whatever respecting the lives of these two officers. Thus circumstanced, he said, they scarcely knew in what manner to proceed.

*Sir Charles.*—Are you prepared with any account of their voyages?

*Frederic.*—Edmund is ready with the voyage of Wallis; and I have nearly completed that of Captain Carteret. I shall be able to finish mine early in the morning.

*Sir Charles.*—We must, then, dispense with any further account of their lives than such as will be furnished by their respective narratives.

*Mr. Allen.*—Frederic speaks of the voyages of Wallis and Carteret as though they were perfectly distinct.

*Frederic.*—I did not mean to be so understood, sir. For, as Edmund will shortly relate to you, the ships of these officers sailed at the same time from Plymouth, and on the same enterprise; but they separated in the Straits of Magellan; and the commanders afterwards pursued each his own course.

*Louisa.*—Edmund last night stated somewhat of the object of their voyage, that it was projected with the intention of their completing, if possible, those discoveries in the great Pacific Ocean, which had been commenced by Commodore Byron.

*Edmund.*—It was so; and the *Dolphin*, in which Captain Byron had sailed, was the same ship that was now appointed to carry out Captain Wallis. Byron returned in May, 1766, and his ship was again ready for sea in little more than three months.

NARRATIVE OF CAPTAIN WALLIS'S VOYAGE ROUND THE  
WORLD.

CAPTAIN SAMUEL WALLIS, in his majesty's sloop the *Dolphin*, having in company the *Swallow* sloop, commanded by Captain Philip Carteret, and the *Prince Frederic* store-ship, sailed from Plymouth on the twenty-second of August, 1766. At Madeira he received a supply of water, wine, beef, and onions. In September he passed the island of Palma, one of the Canaries, and a week afterwards arrived at the Cape de Verd Islands.

On the twenty-second of October the ships crossed the equator; and, the same day, an incredible number of sea-birds flew over them. About a month subsequently to this the navigators saw, in the evening, after it was dark, a meteor, or body of light of very extraordinary appearance. It continued visible for nearly a minute; and in its progress left behind a train of light, so vivid that the deck was as much illuminated as it could have been by the sun at noon-day. Three days after this they passed many whales and seals, and saw a great number of butterflies and land-birds, particularly snipes and plovers; which induced them to suppose they were not far distant from land. On the eighth of December they passed Cape Blanco, on the coast of South America; and on the sixteenth came to anchor on the south side of Cape Virgin Mary, at the eastern entrance of the Straits of Magellan, having now been absent from England about four months.

Captain Wallis, accompanied by a party of marines, went on shore. A great number of the inhabitants of the adjacent country collected round him. He indicated, by signs, a desire that they would sit down in a semi-circle, which they did with great order and cheerfulness. He then distributed among them knives, scissars, buttons, beads, and other toys, particularly some ribbons for the women, with which they were much delighted. Having



presented them with these, he endeavoured to inform them that he had other things, more valuable, which he was desirous of giving them, in exchange for provisions; but they either could not, or would not understand him, consequently no traffic was carried on with them.

Captain Wallis describes these people to have been extremely tall, stout, and well made. He measured several of the men, and found them from six feet to six feet and a half in height. Their complexion was copper-coloured, and their hair straight, and nearly as harsh as hog's bristles. They were clad in skins (the hairy side inward) which were fastened round their waist with a belt; and they had each a horse, with a kind of saddle, stirrups, and bridle. Their principal weapons were a sling and stones, in the use of which they were peculiarly expert. They were observed to eat some of their flesh-meat raw, particularly the paunch of an ostrich, which they devoured without any other cleansing or preparation than turning it inside out, and shaking it. A few of these people were permitted to go on board the *Dolphin*. When there they did not express either the curiosity or the wonder which the multiplicity of objects, to them equally strange and stupendous, might have been expected to excite. Nothing seemed so much to occupy their attention as the animals of different kinds that were on board the ship. They examined the hogs and the sheep with some curiosity, and were particularly delighted with the guinea fowls and turkeys. They did not seem to desire any thing they saw except apparel; and only one of them, an old man, asked for that. When, however, it was requisite to send these people again on shore, there was considerable difficulty in prevailing with them to leave the ship.

On the following day Captain Wallis entered the Straits of Magellan. His progress afterwards was much impeded by contrary winds and squally weather; yet he reached Port Famine, a bay on the southern extremity of Patagonia, and near the middle of the Straits, on the

twenty-sixth of December. After the vessels were anchored, several tents were pitched on the shore, for the use of the sick, and for those who were employed in collecting wood and water, and mending the rigging. All the sails were taken down and sent on shore to be repaired ; and the armourers, carpenters, and other workmen, were actively employed in refitting the ships, and preparing them for the successful prosecution of their voyage. On the fourteenth of January, provisions sufficient for twelve months' consumption, were taken from the store-ship by the Dolphin, and for ten months' consumption by the Swallow. The store-ship was then discharged, and the Dolphin and Swallow proceeded on their voyage without her.

The innumerable windings, rocks, shoals, and currents of the Straits of Magellan, were the cause of incessant danger to the ships, and required the constant vigilance both of the commanders and the crews. More than once the vessels narrowly escaped being cast on shore.

On the twenty-eighth of January, they were anchored in a harbour called Elizabeth Bay, and the boats were sent on shore for water. Captain Wallis also landed to examine the nature of the coast. Several of the inhabitants approached him. They were clad in seal-skins, and were so filthy in their habits that it was disgusting to be near them. They ate even putrid flesh with a ravenous appetite, and great apparent satisfaction. Their complexions were a dark copper colour. They were low of stature, and armed with bows, arrows, and javelins. These people were almost wholly destitute of curiosity. The only things that amused them, were the clothes of the seamen, and a looking-glass. When they first peeped into the latter, they started back, looking at the sailors, and then at each other. They took another peep as it were by stealth, starting back as before, and then eagerly looking behind it. When, by degrees, they became familiar with it, they smiled, and seeing the image smile in return, they were exceedingly delighted, and burst

into fits of the most violent laughter. They soon left this, however, and every thing else with perfect indifference ; the little they possessed being, to all appearance, equal to their desires. When, at last, they went on shore, it was remarked that not one of them looked back at the vessels, so little impression had the wonders they had seen made upon their minds.

On the eleventh of April, 1767, after a tedious passage of nearly four months, the Dolphin quitted the dreary and inhospitable Straits of Magellan. Captain Wallis, describing the region of these Straits, says, that even in the midst of summer the weather is cold, gloomy, and tempestuous ; that the prospects have more the appearance of a chaos than of nature ; that the valleys, for the most part, are without herbage, and the hills without wood.

It must be remarked, that the day before the Dolphin quitted the Straits, she was carried by a gust of wind and a strong current, to a considerable distance from the Swallow, and a fog coming on, that vessel fell to leeward, separated, and was never afterwards seen during the voyage. Captain Wallis, thus circumstanced, proceeded with the Dolphin alone. Having cleared the Straits, he sailed in a north-westerly direction ; and, after a run of about two months, discovered a low island in nineteen degrees twenty-six minutes south latitude, and one hundred and thirty-seven degrees fifty-six minutes west longitude ; which he named Whitsun island, from having first seen it on Whitsun eve. To another island at a little distance from it, he gave the name of Queen Charlotte's Island. These were each inhabited ; but the captain finding no place where the ships could be anchored, very little intercourse could be had with the inhabitants.

After having seen several other small islands, which he respectively named Egmont, Gloucester, Cumberland, Prince William Henry, and Osnaburgh Islands, Captain Wallis directed the course of his ship further westward ; and, on the eighteenth of June, he discovered an island, which since his time has been much spoken of ; it is

called by the natives Otaheite ; but he named it King George the Third's Island.

Several hundreds of the inhabitants of this island approached the ships in their canoes, making signs of friendship, and one of them holding up, in token of amity, a branch of the plantain tree, a kind of palm which grows there in great abundance. Shortly afterwards, many of the Indians clambered up different parts of the ship to the deck. As one of these was standing and admiring the strange appearance of every thing before him, a goat which was on the deck ran at and butted him on the thighs behind. Being surprised by so unexpected an occurrence, he turned hastily about, and saw the goat raised on his hind legs, and ready to repeat the blow. The appearance of this animal, which was entirely different from any thing he had ever seen before, terrified him to such a degree, that he instantly leaped overboard ; and all the rest, seeing what had happened, precipitately followed his example. In a short time, however, they recovered from their fright, and returned on board.

It was soon afterwards observed that these people were bent upon stealing some of the things which they saw. They were therefore carefully watched, and were detected in almost every attempt. At last, however, one of the midshipmen, with a new laced hat upon his head, happened to approach a place where some of the Indians were standing. While he was conversing by signs with one of them, another came behind him, and suddenly snatching off his hat, leaped into the sea, and swam away with it.

The country appeared to be extremely fertile and beautiful. The hills were crowded with wood ; and the plain near the sea was covered with fruit trees of various kinds. Captain Wallis was desirous of anchoring near this part of the island, but he found it would be impossible, in consequence of the great depth of the water. He therefore continued his course near the shore for some distance, till he came to a large bay. Here the

anchorage was still bad, and the natives exhibited symptoms of very unfriendly disposition.

He proceeded onward in a somewhat north-westerly direction, and next morning anchored the ship about a mile from the shore, opposite to the mouth of an extensive river. A situation so delightful as this gave great delight to the crew; who, from having long subsisted on salt provisions, were becoming very sickly. Preparations were made for landing several of them; but this was opposed by the inhabitants, who approached with weapons in their hands, and attacked the boats. Afterwards several thousands of them collected in canoes, and even ventured to attack the ship. Captain Wallis now thought it requisite to act on the offensive. He ordered cannon and musquetry to be fired into the canoes. This had the desired effect for the present. The canoes dispersed, and the Indians retired to the shore. Their mode of attack had been by stones; some of which, two pounds and upwards in weight, had been thrown with astonishing force and dexterity by means of slings.

When, on the following morning, the coast was seen to be perfectly clear, Captain Wallis caused several armed men to be sent on shore with casks, to obtain water. After they had been some time occupied in this work, a great number of the natives were observed from the ship, cautiously approaching the place from all sides. The sailors were warned of their danger; and they immediately embarked in the boats, leaving the water-casks behind them. The Indians on this advanced with greater speed, and took possession of the casks, with much apparent exultation. A second attack upon the ship seemed to be now in meditation. Canoes were collected from all the adjacent parts of the shore, and several hundred of Indians went on board them. A few shots from the ship again dispersed them; but what, in a peculiar manner, astonished and alarmed this people, was Captain Wallis ordering one of the ship's guns to be fired at several men, who were collected on the side of a hill, at



a considerable distance from the shore. They now believed that no distance was sufficient to secure them from the effect of these murderous weapons. After this the ship's carpenters were landed; and, protected by a considerable body of sailors, they destroyed, with their axes, upwards of fifty canoes.



The Indians seemed inclined to resist no further; and even indicated a wish to enter into an amicable intercourse. Bearing in their hands green boughs, in token of friendship, they brought to the shore several dogs, and swine, with their fore legs tied over their heads to prevent them from running away; and several bundles of cloth which they use for apparel. These they left on the shore, and made signs to the persons on board the ship to fetch them away. Some of the sailors were landed. They carried off the hogs, turned the dogs loose, and left the cloth behind. As a recompense for the hogs, the sailors, by the direction of Captain Wallis, placed upon the shore some hatchets, nails, and other articles, which he thought might be acceptable to the Indians.



They brought two more hogs, but still left the cloth, and did not touch any of the articles that had been left by the sailors. Captain Wallis, on this, directed that not only the hogs but the cloth, should be brought on board the ship. This was no sooner done, than the Indians came down, and with every possible demonstration of joy, carried off all that had been sent them.

The boats were then rowed to the watering place ; and the men filled and brought off all the casks that had been previously left. These had suffered no injury ; but some leathern buckets and funnels, which had been taken away, were not returned. Tents were now erected on the shore, and all the sick men were landed from the ship, under the care of the surgeon, and the protection of a guard.

The surgeon was one day walking out with his gun, when a wild duck flew over his head. He shot at the bird, and it fell dead among some of the natives : they were all panic-struck, and ran away. A little while afterwards several other ducks flew past, of which he brought down three. These incidents gave the natives such a dread of a gun, that if a musket were but pointed at a thousand of them, they would all immediately run away.

A regular traffic was now commenced, chiefly for hogs, poultry, and other fresh provisions ; and fruit, particularly cocoa-nuts, which were very acceptable to the ship's company. These were purchased by nails, knives, and trinkets of various kinds. Some Indians of superior rank one day came to visit the captain ; and he, desirous of presenting them with what he imagined would most gratify them, placed before them a guinea, a crown piece, a Spanish dollar, a few shillings, some new halfpence, and two large nails ; making signs that they might take what they liked best. The nails were first seized with great eagerness, and then a few of the halfpence ; but the silver and gold lay neglected. With the nails and halfpence they were rendered superlatively happy.

The ship had been here somewhat more than three weeks, when a tall majestic female, about forty-five years of age, was conducted to the ship. Captain Wallis was informed that she was a person of great consequence, and lived in a valley about two miles from the shore. She seemed under no restraint either from diffidence or fear ; and behaved all the while she was on board, with that kind of easy freedom which always distinguishes conscious superiority, and habitual command. The captain, among other things, presented her with a long blue mantle, which he threw over her shoulders, and tied with ribbons. Before she retired, she, by signs, invited him to her house. Consequently, on the ensuing day, he went on shore to visit her. He was attended by some of his officers, but particularly by two who, as well as himself, had been rendered extremely weak by illness. Oberea, the female here spoken of, who was a princess of Otaheite, approached the shore to meet them. She perceived their languid state, and directed some of her people to carry them<sup>ed</sup> in their arms. Captain Wallis, though very infirm, chose to walk. On this the princess herself took him by the arm ; and whenever they came to a splash of water or dirt, she lifted him over it with as little ceremony, and with as little trouble, as the captain would have lifted a child. A vast multitude of the inhabitants crowded round them in their progress ; but, when Oberea merely waved her hand, they instantly withdrew, and left a free passage. The house in which this princess resided, was a wooden building, more than three hundred feet in length. It was open at the sides, and consisted of little more than a roof thatched with large leaves, and supported by thirty-nine wooden pillars on each side, and fourteen in the middle.

While they were on this visit, the surgeon, who had walked till he was very warm, unthinkingly took off his wig to cool and refresh himself. A sudden exclamation from one of the Indians who saw it, drew the attention of the rest, and in a moment every eye was fixed upon

the prodigy. The whole assembly stood for some time motionless, in silent astonishment, which could not have been more strongly expressed if they had seen him unscrew and take off his arms or legs.

Before the party returned to the ship, Oberea ordered some bales of Indian cloth to be brought ; and with this, though somewhat against their inclination, she insisted on clothing them all according to the fashion of the country. On the following day, when Captain Wallis sent to her a present of hatchets, bill-hooks, &c., the person who took them found her giving an entertainment to not fewer than a thousand of the natives. The messes, which were served up in cocoa-nut shells, she first distributed with her own hands to the guests. She then sat down herself, on a place somewhat elevated above the rest ; and two of her women, placing themselves by her, one on each side, fed her ; she opening her mouth to receive the food as they presented it to her.

No other quadrupeds were seen on the island of Otaheite, than hogs and dogs ; nor were the inhabitants possessed of any kind of earthen vessels, so that all their food was either baked or roasted. Having also no vessel in which water could be subjected to the action of fire, they had no idea that it could be made hot. As Oberea was one morning at breakfast in the ship, one of her attendants, a man of some note, saw the surgeon fill the tea-pot, by turning the cock of an urn that stood upon the table. This man's curiosity was excited, and, when no one was attending to him, he turned the cock, and received the boiling water on his hand. Instantly he roared out in agony, and ran about the cabin, with the most extravagant and ridiculous expressions of pain and astonishment. The surgeon, who had innocently been the cause of the injury, applied a remedy ; but some time elapsed before the poor Otaheitan could again be rendered comfortable.

During the time that Captain Wallis was here, there happened to be an eclipse of the sun. For the ob-

serving of this he took on shore a large reflecting telescope ; and, after the observation, he went to the house of Oberea, taking the telescope with him. She was much pleased with its structure ; and the captain endeavoured to make her comprehend its use. This he did by fixing it so as to command a view of several distant objects with which she was well acquainted, but which could not be distinguished by the naked eye, and then desiring her to look through it. She no sooner saw them, than she started back with astonishment, and endeavoured to distinguish the objects without the glass. She then looked through it again, and again sought, with her naked eye, but in vain, for the objects which it had discovered to her view. As they thus by turns vanished and re-appeared, her countenance and gestures expressed a mixture of wonder and delight which no language can describe.

Captain Wallis sent some of his men into the interior of the island, to ascertain the nature of the country. They reported it to be extremely fertile ; and described even its highest mountains to be clad with verdure to their summits. They found an abundance of excellent water, and various kinds of fruit, with sugar-canes of luxuriant growth ; ginger, turmeric, and other important vegetable productions. The woods abounded in parrots, parroquets, and green doves, and no kind of venomous reptile whatever was seen. The inhabitants dwelt in houses, which consisted only of roofs supported by poles, and which, at a distance, had much the appearance of English barns. Many of these houses had gardens and yards walled in, and were abundantly supplied with hogs, poultry, and fruit.

During the time that Captain Wallis was at Otaheite, he had the ship completely refitted ; and she was well stocked both with water and fresh provisions. The decks were crowded with hogs and poultry, of which only the small ones were now killed, the others being reserved for sea-store. On the twenty-seventh of July,

Oberea and her people, having taken leave of the captain and his officers in the most affectionate manner (she in particular, with an excess of grief that could scarcely be pacified), the ship was unmoored and left the island, after a continuance there of about five weeks.

At day-light the next morning, the navigators were within sight of another island. Here Captain Wallis observed but few inhabitants; and these appeared to live in a manner very different from the people he had lately visited; their habitations being only small huts. Many cocoa-nut and other trees were seen upon the shore; but the heads of all of them had been blown away, probably in a hurricane. To this island, which was about six miles in length, Captain Wallis gave the name of Sir Charles Saunders's Island. He subsequently discovered many others, which he respectively named Lord Howe's Island, Scilly Islands, Boscawen's Island, and Keppel's Isle; but he does not appear to have landed on any of them, except the last, and he did not continue there many hours. The inhabitants of Keppel's Isle were peaceably inclined, and, in their general character, seemed much to resemble those of Otaheite. They were clad in a kind of matting, and each of them appeared to have the first joint of the little finger cut off.

It was now the depth of winter in the southern hemisphere, the ship was becoming leaky, the rudder shook her stern very much, and it was imagined that her bottom was not in a sound state. For these reasons the captain considered she would be very unfit to encounter the bad weather to which she would be exposed either in going round Cape Horn, or through the Straits of Magellan. He therefore determined to take a nearer and more convenient passage home, by Tinian, Batavia, and the Cape of Good Hope. At any of these places he knew that he could obtain provisions and water; and, if it were requisite, could repair and refit his vessel.

In consequence of this determination he bore away, and passed Boscawen's Island without visiting it ; and on Sunday, the sixteenth of August, land was discovered, in latitude thirteen degrees eighteen minutes south, and in longitude one hundred and seventy-seven degrees west. This proved also an island, and the officers of the ship requested permission to name it Wallis's Island. The inhabitants were a robust people, of dark colour, and quite naked, except a kind of mat which was fastened round their middle. They were armed with large clubs ; and, when the boat was sent ashore, to obtain some cocoa-nuts, a great abundance of which was seen, they came down in a body, and endeavoured to seize it. This, however, they were prevented from doing by one of the men firing a musket near them, on which they all immediately ran away.

Early the next morning Captain Wallis proceeded on his voyage ; and on Saturday the nineteenth of September, he arrived at the island of Tinian. As soon as the ship was anchored, he sent part of his crew on shore to erect tents, and bring off refreshments ; and, about noon, the boats returned with some cocoa-nuts, limes, and oranges. In the evening, tents having been erected, the surgeon and all the invalids were landed. The captain and the first lieutenant, who were both in a sickly state, also landed. An officer, with twelve men, was sent into the interior of the island to hunt for cattle. These returned with a fine young bull, which they had killed. Part of this was eaten on shore, and the remainder was sent on board the ship, together with a quantity of bread-fruit, limes, and oranges.

The carpenters were then set to work to repair the ship. All the sails were sent on shore to be mended ; and the armourers also were actively employed in repairing the iron work.

Captain Wallis found at this island every kind of food and refreshment that had been mentioned in Lord Anson's Voyages. His sick began to recover from the



day they went on shore : but the heat he found much more oppressive here than it had been at Otaheite. Many of the cocoa-nut trees near the landing place had been wastefully cut down for the purpose of obtaining the fruit ; and the hunters suffered excessive fatigue, in consequence of the interior of the island being almost one continued thicket, and the cattle being so wild that it was extremely difficult to approach them.

In somewhat less than a month, the sick men being recovered, and all the requisites for the ship having been completed, the captain again embarked his men and proceeded on his voyage. His course was now in a westerly direction, inclining to the north. Some days after he left Tinian, a tremendous storm arose, which tore several of the sails to pieces, and blew them away. During the continuance of this storm, the upper works of the vessel received much damage, and many things were washed overboard. The weather was dark and gloomy, and there was an incessant and heavy rain for two days and two nights.

On the third of November the ship arrived at the Bashee Islands. Captain Wallis did not attempt to land on any of them ; but, continuing his course, he crossed the equator on the sixteenth of November, and on the thirtieth brought the ship to an anchor near Batavia, the capital of the island of Java.

The climate of this part of the island is very unhealthy. Captain Wallis consequently gave peremptory orders that none of his men should go on shore, except those who were on duty ; and he made other regulations which kept the crew in perfect health. He was desirous of obtaining several kinds of stores ; but not being able to procure any except what were either very bad, or of exorbitant price, he once more stood out to sea ; and, in about two months, arrived at the Cape of Good Hope.

Captain Wallis was now so extremely ill, that he was carried on shore, and conveyed about eight miles up the

country, where he continued all the time that the ship lay off the Cape. When she was ready to sail, after having been completely repaired, and supplied afresh with wood, water, and provisions, he returned on board, but without having received the least benefit from his residence on shore.

The navigators reached the island of St. Helena, on Thursday the seventeenth of March. Five days afterwards, they passed the island of Ascension, and on the nineteenth of May, Captain Wallis landed at Hastings in Sussex. The ship proceeded to the Downs, where she came to an anchor just six hundred and thirty-seven days after she had left Plymouth ; having, in the interval, made a complete circuit of the globe.

*Louisa*.—According to the narrative that my brother has just read, by far the most interesting and important part of Captain Wallis's voyage appears to have been confined to his five weeks' residence at the island of Otaheite.

*Edmund*.—The account of his transactions at that island certainly occupies a considerable portion of his narrative, and may perhaps be esteemed the most amusing part of it ; but his voyage is chiefly important for its correct nautical observations : nearly all of which I have omitted, from their having little or no connexion with a narrative of his mere personal adventures ; and from their not being particularly useful to any, except such persons as are likely to follow his track. His examination of the Straits of Magellan was much more minute and correct than that of any of his predecessors.

*Mr. Allen*.—This examination may have been thought important at that time ; but it does not appear that the Straits of Magellan can ever become well known to Europeans ; for the inducement to navigate them is very inconsiderable, and the dangers that they present are always extremely formidable.

*Sir Charles*.—So much so that I believe vessels in

general prefer passing round Cape Horn, to this shorter but more intricate course.

*Louisa*.—My brother has been somewhat particular in his account of the residence of Captain Wallis in the island of Otaheite, but he has omitted to describe the inhabitants of that island.

*Edmund*.—I will immediately supply that omission. They are a stout, well-formed, and active race of people. Their complexions are tawny; and their hair in general black, though in some individuals it is brown, in others red, and in others flaxen. Both the males and females are gracefully clad in a kind of white cloth, made of the bark of a tree, which had much resemblance to a coarse kind of Chinese paper. Their hair was usually worn tied in a bunch on the middle of the head; or in two smaller bunches, one on each side. They also wore ornaments of feathers, flowers, pieces of shells, and pearls.

*Lady Irwin*.—How great is the contrast betwixt the inhabitants of Otaheite, and the natives of the dreary coasts of the southern extremity of America, whom Captain Wallis has also described, and in whom human nature appears in the very lowest state of degradation!

*Mr. Allen*.—In the former there is some degree of refinement, but in the latter we can distinguish little more than the most disgusting brutality.

*Lady Irwin*.—Oberea, if I recollect, is described by Captain Wallis to have been the queen of Otaheite, yet Edmund has styled her only a princess.

*Mr. Allen*.—She was the wife to a chief named Oamo, and governed the greater part of Otaheite in behalf of their son, according to the custom of that island.

*Louisa*.—Though I am aware of the much greater utility of iron than the precious metals, yet I am surprised that the inhabitants of Otaheite should have selected nails in preference to both silver and gold. I should have imagined that even the beautiful colours of the latter would have rendered them more attractive to ignorant people than iron,

*Mr. Allen.*—This circumstance will not probably appear to you extraordinary, when you consider the value and utility of an iron nail, among a people who are not possessed of iron; who also have not the most distant idea of artificial riches; and who, till this time, had been obliged even to sew the planks of their canoes together with a kind of cordage, passed through holes bored, by a very laborious process, with a piece of bone fixed into a stick.

*Edmund.*—My sister's mistake appears to be owing to a want of recollection that, previously to the selection of nails by the persons to whom she alludes, iron instruments of different kinds had been given to several of the inhabitants of Otaheite. This had not only been done without the sanction of the captain, but by many of the crew even without his knowledge.

*Lady Irwin.*—Edmund has mentioned that Captain Wallis anchored his two ships, the Dolphin and Swallow, in a bay in the Straits of Magellan, called Port Famine. Is there not a very distressing history connected with that place?

*Mr. Allen.*—There is indeed. I believe I can relate to you the particulars of it from Sir Thomas Cavendish's Voyage round the World. It was he who gave to it the name of Port Famine. In the month of January, 1587, he entered this harbour; on the shore of which the Spaniards had, some time before, built a fortress for defence of the Straits, and for the purpose of preventing the passage through them, of any vessels except their own. They had also built a town, and erected several churches; and, a few years before the arrival of Sir Thomas Cavendish, there had been four hundred Spaniards resident here. But the severity of the climate, the barrenness of the soil, and the continual harassing of the Indians, dreadfully reduced their number; and for two years, those few that were left subsisted almost wholly on shell-fish, which they picked up from the rocks. At last they died, like so many dogs,

in their houses ; and the stench of the putrifying bodies compelled the wretched survivors to quit the place, and ramble about upon the shore without any place of shelter or retreat. Here they subsisted on sea-herbs, roots, shell-fish, and such animals as they were able to kill. The only man who remained of this wretched colony was picked up and rescued from destruction, by the ship in which Sir Thomas Cavendish sailed.

*Louisa*.—After so dreadful an occurrence, he could not certainly have more appropriately named the place than by calling it Port Famine. When, hereafter, I shall read any account of the Straits of Magellan, I shall not forget the history of the Spaniards at Port Famine.

*Frederic*.—There are yet a few important circumstances relative to Captain Wallis's voyage, which have not been noticed ; one of these is, that it was his constant practice, during the time he was navigating such parts of the sea as were not perfectly known, to lie to every night, and make sail only in the day, that nothing important might escape his notice. His attention to the health of his crew also proved of great utility ; and his care, relative both to provisions and water, prevented him from suffering those extreme inconveniences which had been experienced by many preceding voyagers.

*Mr. Allen*.—His care in providing water proved, in several instances, of the utmost importance. It is remarkable that he was never reduced to the necessity of putting his people on a short allowance of that important article of life, during his whole voyage. He had on board his ship a still which was capable of holding fifty-six gallons. From this quantity of sea-water, at an expense of nine pounds' weight of wood, and sixty-nine pounds of coals, he was able to obtain, by distillation, forty-two gallons of fresh water, in five hours and a quarter. He always began to use this still when the whole stock of fresh water on board the ship was reduced to forty-five tons. He likewise collected rain water

by various ingenious contrivances ; and preserved it with the utmost diligence. And he never allowed water to be fetched away at pleasure ; the officer of the watch had orders to give to such as brought provisions of any kind, sufficient water to dress them.

*Sir Charles.*—Thus you see, my dear Louisa, that the voyage of Captain Wallis was not quite so unimportant a one as you were inclined to imagine.



## FOURTEENTH EVENING.

As Frederic Montagu had been unable to obtain any account relative to Captain Carteret, further than that, having sailed round the world with Commodore Byron, he had been selected as a proper person to be appointed second in command in the expedition of which Edmund had, on the preceding evening, related a narrative ; he commenced the abstract of his voyage as follows :

### NARRATIVE OF CAPTAIN CARTERET'S VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

THE Swallow sloop of war, commanded by Captain PHILIP CARTERET, sailed from Plymouth on the twenty-second of August, 1766, in company with the Dolphin, commanded by Captain Wallis. She was an old vessel, and by no means fitted for a long voyage. She was also very inefficiently supplied with stores, and other requisites. These Captain Carteret several times applied for, but to no purpose. The want of them began to be felt even before his vessel had arrived at Madeira ; and the state of the ship became so bad by the time she had entered the Straits of Magellan, that Captain Wallis, as the commander of the expedition, was there requested to consider whether she ought not to be sent back to



England, rather than to attempt what, it was now believed by her officers, she was incapable of executing, a voyage into the Pacific Ocean. Captain Wallis replied that he did not consider himself authorized to change her destination; and, on a subsequent application from Captain Carteret, he positively forbade her returning, and directed that the voyage should be prosecuted pursuant to the orders that had been given in England.

Notwithstanding this, on Friday, the tenth of April, 1767, when the western outlet of the Strait was in sight, the *Dolphin* passed the *Swallow*; at day-break next morning her top-sails only were visible above the horizon, and after that time Captain Carteret saw her no more. This separation was the more unfortunate, as no part of the woollen cloth, linen, beads, cutlery ware, and toys, which were intended for the use of both the ships, and were so necessary to be given to the different tribes of Indians in exchange for refreshments, had been put on board the *Swallow*; nor was she provided either with a forge or iron, which many circumstances might render absolutely necessary to the preservation of the ship. Under all these disadvantages, however, the crew exhibited no symptoms of despondency, and the captain, to the utmost of his power, was resolved to perform his duty.

Although the *Dolphin* had cleared the Straits of Magellan, the *Swallow*, which was a peculiarly bad sailer, was not able to do so, until nearly a week afterwards. In this part of the voyage it had been requisite to stave a great number of the water casks for the purpose of making the vessel sail better, and for preventing her from being carried upon the rocks. As soon as she was again in the open sea, Captain Carteret found it necessary to direct her course either towards the Island of Juan Fernandez, or that of Masafuero, to increase his stock of provisions and water, before he sailed westward. From this time till the eighth of May, the wind continued unfavourable. It blew a continued storm, with sudden

gusts still more violent, accompanied by much rain and hail, or rather by falling fragments of half-melted ice. At intervals also there were thunder and lightning of the most alarming description; and the sea raged in so dreadful a manner, as several times to lay even the whole vessel under water.

On the tenth of May, Captain Carteret reached the island of Juan Fernandez, and was astonished to find it in the possession of the Spaniards, who had fortified it, and enclosed many of the parts that were clear of wood, and capable of cultivation. The wind was so unfavourable that it was found impossible to approach the shore without danger. He consequently determined to leave it, and sail for Masafuero, near which island he came to anchor two days afterwards. Here, with much difficulty, owing to the stormy and unsettled state of the weather, a considerable supply of water was obtained; but in procuring it, many of the casks were destroyed, and some of the men nearly lost their lives.

In one instance it happened that three of the men were unavoidably left all night upon the island. They had neither food nor shelter. The rain was violent and incessant, and accompanied by such thunder and lightning, as in Europe are never known. Totally destitute of protection against either the rain, or cold, which soon began to be severely felt, these men adopted a temporary resource, by lying upon each other, each man alternately placing himself between the other two. In this situation it may easily be believed that they longed most ardently for the dawn. When they joined their companions the next morning, they were almost dead with cold and hunger; but, proper care being taken, they soon recovered, and on the ensuing day were as hearty as if nothing extraordinary had happened.

While the Swallow continued near the island of Masafuero, the sailors in the different boats caught as much fish as supported them for many days. They also killed several seals, and made oil of their fat, for burning in

the lamps, and for other uses on board the ship. A tent had been erected on the shore to protect the men employed in filling the water casks ; and these men killed a great number of birds that were considered to be a species of Guinea-fowls. These, during a gale of wind in the night, were attracted by the light of the fire, and flew into it even faster than the men could take them out.

The weather was stormy during nearly the whole time that the Swallow was off this island ; and the gusts of wind were so violent, that the water was frequently raised up, and whirled round in the air, higher than even the top of the masts. After the watering was completed, the men were taken again on board, and Captain Carteret sailed from this turbulent climate.

He now proceeded northward, intending to examine two islands that were laid down in the maps by the names of St. Ambrose and St. Felix, for the purpose of ascertaining whether they would afford conveniences for shipping to refresh at. He however missed them, and then continued his course in a westerly direction, and nearly the same parallel of latitude, to a great distance. It was now about the middle of June, the depth of winter in these parts, and the weather was stormy, dark, and cold.

On the second of July a young gentleman, son of Major Pitcairn of the marines, discovered land toward the north. This, as the vessel approached it the next day, appeared like a great rock rising out of the sea. It proved an island, about five miles in circumference ; was covered with trees, and seemed to be uninhabited. On one side of it a small stream of fresh water was seen running down the side of a rock. Captain Carteret was desirous of landing here, but the surf, which broke upon it with great violence, rendered this impossible. From the name of the person by whom it had been discovered, the captain called it Pitcairn's Island. It was ascertained to be situated in twenty-five degrees two minutes south

latitude, and one hundred and thirty-three degrees twenty-one minutes west longitude.

In his course westward from Pitcairn's Island, Captain Carteret discovered two others, which he named Osna-burgh and Gloucester Islands. The crew now began to suffer much from the scurvy. In addition to this inconvenience, the badness of the weather, and the defective state of the ship, were such, that the captain found it necessary to proceed in a northerly course, in the hope of being able to discover some island where he might obtain refreshments for his men, and repair the vessel.

A group of islands was not long afterwards discovered, situated in about eleven degrees of south latitude, and one hundred and sixty-four degrees fifty minutes east longitude. To these islands, in honour of her late majesty, Captain Carteret gave the name of Queen Charlotte's Islands. On the shore of one of these, which he named Egmont Island, some inhabitants were seen. They were of black colour, quite naked, and had woolly heads. The captain sent the master and fifteen men in one of the boats, to look out for a convenient situation for landing, and at which a supply of wood and water might be obtained. This man went on shore at a place where there were several houses regularly built; and, by his indiscreet conduct, in cutting down one of the cocoa-nut trees, he gave great offence to the inhabitants. This was the commencement of an affray in which himself and some others lost their lives; and several of the Indians also were slain.

The captain and the first lieutenant were now the only officers in the ship capable of navigating her home; and they were both extremely ill. The ship's company also were in great want of refreshments, and they had no toys, iron tools, nor cutlery-ware, by which they could establish a traffic for them.

Leaving Egmont island, which with great regret he was compelled to do in consequence of the affray that had taken place, Captain Carteret passed several other

islands, some of which also were inhabited, and appeared to be well stocked with hogs and poultry, cocoa-nut trees, plantains, and bananas. It was with infinite regret that Captain Carteret was unable to obtain any of these. He was now confined to his bed, and dangerously ill; and great part of the crew was disabled. No alternative was left but to steer further northward, in hope of being able to refresh at an island which Dampier had discovered some years before, and called New Britain.

He sailed in search of New Britain on Tuesday, the eighteenth of August; discovered it about a week afterwards, and anchored in a bay near a little uninhabited island, three leagues north-west of Cape St. George. Here he procured some cocoa-nuts; and had the hope of being able to obtain an ample supply both of fish and turtle, but these were all so shy that scarcely one could be caught. He, however, procured an abundance of oysters and cockles of large size. From the free use of cocoa-nuts and other fresh food, the sick men soon began to recover their health.

Captain Carteret observed on this island several nutmeg trees; with various kinds of aloes, canes, and bamboos; and many trees and plants that had been altogether unknown to him before. The woods abounded with pigeons of various kinds, rooks, parrots, a large kind of birds with black plumage, which made a barking noise somewhat like that of a dog; and numerous others which he could neither describe nor name.

While the *Swallow* continued near this island, she underwent as complete a repair as was possible with the means that the crew had to effect it. The leaks were stopped: the bottom, which had been much eaten by worms, was covered with a mixture of hot pitch and tar, boiled together; and the sails and rigging were all mended.

Before the vessel sailed, Captain Carteret caused to be carried on board upwards of a thousand cocoa-nuts; and as many of the cabbages of the cocoa-nut trees as

could be used while they were good. These were a very important store for the sick.

In the beginning of September the *Swallow* entered what appeared to be a bay of the island of New Britain, but on passing up it, this apparent bay proved to be the entrance of a channel, which divided the island into two parts. To the easternmost of these parts, the captain gave the name of New Ireland.

During the passage of the *Swallow* through this strait, ten canoes, some of them near ninety feet in length, though very narrow, came off from New Ireland, having on board about a hundred and fifty of the natives. These came near enough to exchange some old trifles with the voyagers, for a few nails and pieces of iron. They were black, woolly-headed, and naked, except a few ornaments of shells upon their arms and legs. What, however, appeared singular, their hair was abundantly covered with a white powder; and not that on their head only, but even their beards. Each of them had a long feather stuck over one of his ears; and they were armed with spears and long poles. After they had continued a little while near the ship, a breeze sprung up: they returned to the shore, and the ship proceeded on her voyage.

The passage which Captain Carteret thus discovered betwixt the islands of New Britain and New Ireland and which he named St. George's Channel, he considered to be a very important one. He observes that it is not only much shorter, but much better, than that round either outside of the islands, and may probably, in its consequences, be of great advantage to future navigators, especially as he did not doubt but refreshments of every kind might easily be procured from the inhabitants of either bank, in exchange for beads, ribbons, iron tools, and cutlery ware.

On the thirteenth of September the ship was clear of the strait, which was estimated to be somewhat more than eighty leagues in length. The captain was still so much enfeebled by sickness, that it was with great



difficulty he could perform the duty that had devolved upon him, in consequence of his deficiency of officers. After having passed several other islands, the *Swallow*, on the twenty-sixth of October, arrived at the southern extremity of Mindanao, where a small town and fort were observed. A shot having been fired at one of the boats from the fort, the captain resolved to proceed further. He did so, and anchored his ship in a little bay some leagues eastward of the town, and about a cable's length from the shore. Here were no signs of inhabitants. The boats were sent ashore, and returned with a supply of water; and on the ensuing day the captain intended to procure a further supply from the same place, and also to bring off some wood for fuel: but about nine o'clock at night he was suddenly alarmed by a loud noise, much resembling the war-whoop of the American savages. It proceeded from that part of the shore which was nearest to the ship, and was a shout, or yell, inexpressibly terrific. The next morning, however, no inhabitants of any description were to be seen; and the long-boat was sent ashore for more water, proper care being taken for the protection of the men. No sooner had the sailors landed, than a crowd of armed men rushed from the woods. One of these held up something which was of a white colour, and was considered to be a signal of amity. It did not, however, prove such; for, after an apparently friendly intercourse with the standard-bearer, whilst the ship's crew were employed in repairing the rigging, and procuring wood and water, the inhabitants indicated the most hostile intentions. These they were only prevented from putting in execution, from fear of the ship's guns, which commanded the whole range of the shore. Captain Carteret determined to leave so inhospitable a place, and, early in the following morning, he proceeded, in a south-westerly direction, towards the island of Celebes.

In his course through the Straits of Macassar, betwixt the islands of Celebes and Borneo, Captain Carteret

had an opportunity of correcting many errors which had been inserted in the maps previously to that time.

The weather became tempestuous, and the wind contrary. The ravages of the scurvy also were so dreadful that not an individual in the ship was free. Opposing winds and currents now prevented the voyagers from proceeding either west or south; the rigging was greatly damaged, and the crew, unable to repair this, had scarcely power even to navigate the ship. In this deplorable condition they continued till the tenth of December. It is not perhaps easy, observes Captain Carteret, for the most fertile imagination to conceive by what occurrence their danger and distress could possibly be increased. Yet, debilitated, sick and dying; within sight of land which they could not reach; and exposed to tempests which they could not resist, they had the additional misfortune to be attacked by a pirate. This unexpected evil was the more dreadful from its having happened at midnight, when the black darkness that prevailed cooperated strongly with whatever else had tended to produce confusion and terror. The attack, however, rather roused than depressed them; and though the enemy attempted to board the *Swallow* even before the crew could have imagined that an enemy was near, his purpose was defeated. The assailants were all driven off from the rigging and deck, which they had attempted to ascend; and the ship's guns being brought to bear upon the pirate, she was shortly afterwards sunk, and all on board perished. It was a small vessel, but of what country or how manned, it was impossible to ascertain. The lieutenant and one of the men of the *Swallow* were wounded, but not dangerously; part of the rigging was cut, and the vessel received some other slight damage.

Soon after this, Captain Carteret had the mortification to find that the westerly monsoon had set in, against which it was impossible that any ship should proceed as far westward as Batavia, the place which he had hoped

even before this time to have reached. He had lately buried thirteen of his crew, and thirty more were at the point of death. All the petty officers were among the sick, and both himself and the lieutenant, who did the whole duty of the ship, were in a very feeble condition. Thus circumstanced, the captain changed his intention of immediately proceeding to Batavia, and endeavoured to reach Macassar, a Dutch settlement in the island of Celebes. This he accomplished, and, on the fifteenth of December, anchored their vessel about four miles from that town.

The distress of the crew was scarcely yet at its height. The governor of Macassar sent to the captain a peremptory order that he should immediately leave the port ; and that he should not anchor on any part of the coast, nor permit his people to land in any place within the jurisdiction of that government. To no purpose did the captain represent the deplorable state of the ship, and exhibit, to the agents of the government, the unhappy condition of his seamen dying of languor and disease, and use the most urgent entreaty to be permitted to purchase refreshments for them. The governor was inexorable, and insisted on their immediate departure. Reduced to the last extremity of despair, the captain replied to this, that persons in their situation had nothing worse to fear than what they then suffered, and that, therefore, if they were not immediately allowed the liberty of the port to purchase refreshments and procure shelter, he would, in defiance of every menace, and of all the force that might be opposed to him, anchor close to the town ; that if by such procedure he could not compel the government to comply with requisitions, the reasonableness of which could not be controverted, the crew should then run the ship aground under the walls, and after selling their lives as dearly as they could, should bring upon that people the disgrace of having reduced a friend and ally to so dreadful an extremity. This threat being followed by preparations to put it into

execution, had, in some degree, the desired effect. A considerable quantity of fresh provisions was sent from the town, and a stipulation was entered into, that the government should send a pilot to conduct the ship into a little bay not far distant, where she would be sheltered from the weather, where the crew might obtain plenty of provision and other refreshments, and on the shore of which they should be permitted to erect an hospital for the sick.

This arrangement being made, the ship was conducted on the following morning to her station. The captain landed and found a little pallisadoed fort of eight guns, which he was allowed to convert into an hospital. He immediately sent to this place such of his sick as were thought capable of recovering ; and he was himself permitted to occupy a small house close to the fort. As soon as the crew had landed, a guard of soldiers was set over them, with express orders that they should not be suffered to wander more than thirty yards from the fort, and that they should not hold any intercourse whatever with the people of the country. The more immediate consequences of this restraint were an impossibility of their purchasing provisions, except through the agency of the soldiers, who imposed the most exorbitant prices on the articles they sold. Distressing as these regulations were, Captain Carteret and his crew were obliged to comply with them.

During his continuance at this place, intelligence was privately conveyed to him, that a conspiracy had been formed betwixt the Dutch government at Macassar, and a chief of one of the native tribes of the country, to surprise and seize the ship, and destroy all those who belonged to her. For a short time before the receipt of this intelligence a small canoe had been observed to pass round the ship several times, at different hours of the night, and always to have disappeared as soon as any of the crew were in motion. If such a conspiracy had really been entered into, the cautious measures adopted by

Captain Carteret, in putting his ship into an efficient state of defence, and regularly exercising, both at the great guns and with small arms, all his crew who were in health, entirely frustrated the project. During the five months that he continued here no attempt whatever was made either upon the ship or the crew.

The captain had obtained wood and water in plenty. He had been able, in some degree, to refit the vessel; and had procured, though at an exorbitant price, a sufficiency of provisions for the further prosecution of his voyage. The season having now arrived in which the easterly monsoon was about to set in, and navigation towards the west would again be practicable, he sailed on Sunday, the twenty-second of May, for Batavia. Such, however, was the defective state of the ship during her passage to this place, that, with two pumps constantly at work, it was not without difficulty she could be prevented from sinking. She arrived at Batavia on the third of June.

Some difficulties occurred in the Dutch government at this place granting permission to procure such conveniences as might enable him to put the ship, which was now in a most decayed and deplorable condition, in a state to sail for Europe. But these having been at length obtained, all her stores were taken out, and she underwent a thorough examination. Among other defects, it was found that the bowsprit, and some of the yards or cross-beams to which the sails are fastened, were rotten, and altogether unfit for further service; the copper sheathing of the bottom was everywhere eaten off by worms, and the main planks of the bottom were so much damaged that they required a complete repair. The iron-work of the ship, in general, was also in a very bad condition, and most other parts in a state of great decay.

It was, therefore, found requisite to continue at Batavia between three and four months. The defects of the ship were repaired, and she was put into a state in which it was thought she might with safety proceed to

Europe. The captain was happily able to procure here a supply of English seamen; for he had lost twenty-four of the men whom he had brought from Europe, and he had twenty-four others so ill that seven of them subsequently died during the passage to the Cape of Good Hope.

Captain Carteret sailed from Batavia on Wednesday, the fifteenth of September, passed through the Straits of Sunda, betwixt the islands of Java and Sumatra; and, on the twenty-eighth of November arrived at the Cape of Good Hope. At this place, the *Swallow* continued nearly six weeks. The navigators now breathed a pure air, and had wholesome food; and they were permitted freely to go about the country. All this operated very beneficially towards restoring them to health.

Leaving the Cape, Captain Carteret proceeded towards the island of St. Helena; and afterwards to a bay of the uninhabited island of Ascension. Here the crew obtained an important supply of turtle. They caught and carried on board the ship eighteen, which weighed from four to six hundred pounds each.

Nothing very important occurred during the remainder of the voyage; and the *Swallow* arrived in safety at Spithead, on the twentieth of March, 1769.

*Louisa*.—The appointment of Captain Carteret to the command of a vessel destined for making discoveries in the Pacific Ocean, was certainly judicious; for, having previously sailed round the world with Commodore Byron, his knowledge and experience must have been considered very valuable.

*Lady Irwin*.—True; but to send out such a ship as the *Swallow*, which had previously been in the service upwards of thirty years, and in her timbers, the sheathing of her bottom, and her whole equipment was extremely defective, was an indication of the most unaccountable improvidence, mismanagement, or ignorance in those by whom she was destined and equipped for so long and difficult a voyage.



*Sir Charles.*—Hence the narrative of Captain Carteret's voyage has been rendered interesting, not so much by a relation of its geographical discoveries, as by a recital of the difficulties and distresses that himself and his crew underwent in endeavouring to keep their heads above water.

*Mr. Allen.*—It was remarked by Captain Cook, to be a considerable diminution of the value of this gentleman's discoveries, that his notes of the longitude were not confirmed by astronomical observations, and hence that they were in many respects erroneous.

*Frederic.*—But, sir, the correction of these errors appears to have been out of his power; for all the astronomical instruments seem to have been placed on board Captain Wallis's ship, the *Dolphin*; and by the same strange neglect as all the cloth, linen, beads, cutlery-ware, and toys, that had been intended for the use of both ships to traffic with the Indians.

*Edmund.*—There seem to have been many mistakes in the conduct of this voyage. After the *Swallow*, in consequence of her bad sailing, had been left by the *Dolphin* in the Straits of Magellan, no hope could be entertained of the two ships meeting again; for no plan of operations appears to have been arranged, nor any subsequent place of rendezvous appointed.

*Lady Irwin.*—The discovery of Pitcairn's Island was made during the voyage of Captain Carteret. Some extraordinary circumstances relative to this island have lately been ascertained. I am particularly desirous of inquiring, at the close of this evening's conversation, whether Louisa recollects what she has read on this subject.

*Louisa.*—I have a perfect recollection of it. In the year 1814, his majesty's frigate the *Briton*, being in the South Sea, and happening to anchor off this island, it was ascertained that the descendants of the mutineers who, twenty-five years before, had seized the *Bounty* armed ship, commanded by Lieutenant (now Vice-admiral) Bligh, had settled there. When the *Briton*

approached the shore, some of the inhabitants paddled off to her in canoes; and to the inexpressible astonishment of the officers and crew, they were hailed in the English language, and asked the name of the ship. The captain answered, and a regular conversation took place. Some of the people went on board the Briton. They explained who they were; and said, that only one of the mutineers, whose name was John Adams, was surviving among them; and that he was then an old man. They further stated that the Bounty had been seized at Otaheite; and that Christian, the leader of the mutiny, had brought six men and eleven women with him from Otaheite. After every thing useful had been taken out of the ship, they related that she was run ashore, set fire to, and burnt. The English married with the Otaheitan women, but they were then all dead except Adams. Christian himself had been murdered by a black man in consequence, as it was supposed, of a jealousy which existed between the people of Otaheite and the English.

*Lady Irwin.*—What, Louisa, is said respecting the character of this little colony? Had the people been instructed in any religious principles?

*Louisa.*—From their peculiar circumstances they must have been very deficient in the means of instruction, but they were Christians. They professed their belief in the words of the Apostles' Creed, and they never omitted to say a prayer every day at noon. Their morals also, as far as could be ascertained by an intercourse of only a few hours, appeared unexceptionable. The intermarriages that had taken place amongst them had made a general relationship through the whole colony; and the greatest degree of harmony and happiness prevailed.



## FIFTEENTH EVENING.

It was this evening stated by Frederic Montagu, that he and his friend Edmund were about to introduce into

discussion the memoirs of a circumnavigator and discoverer, whose talents and success had seldom been equalled, and never surpassed. Miss Irwin said, that this could be no other than Captain JAMES COOK, whose Voyages, she believed, had attained greater celebrity than any works of a similar kind that had ever been published. Her conjecture was immediately acknowledged to be correct; and Sir Charles remarked that Captain Cook, having been selected as the commander of three important expeditions into the South Sea, and having, in every respect, fulfilled the expectations of the British government, by whom he was sent out, it might be imagined that he had possessed all the advantages of a good education. "That, sir," said Edmund, "was far from being the case; for his father, having been only in the humble station of a day-labourer, had not the means of giving him such an education." Frederic observed, that he had been one of nine children; that he was born in a small cottage, at Marton, a village in the north-riding of Yorkshire, in the month of October, 1728; and that he was taught to read by the village schoolmistress. "He was so," replied Edmund, "but his father having afterwards obtained the situation of bailiff, or head servant of a farm, a few miles distant from his former residence, James was then placed at a day-school, where he was instructed in writing, and a few of the first rules of arithmetic."

*Frederic.*—But he had not long the advantage even of this instruction; for he was soon afterwards taken from school to assist his father in the various kinds of husbandry which were suited to his years.

*Louisa.*—Then he does not appear to have been originally intended for a seafaring life.

*Edmund.*—So far from it, that, at the age of thirteen, he was bound apprentice to a haberdasher and grocer at a fishing-town called Staiths, about ten miles north of Whitby.

*Frederic.*—But this was an employment wholly un-

sued to his disposition ; for, after a year and half's servitude, having contracted a strong propensity to the sea (owing probably to the maritime situation of the place, and the great number of ships that were constantly passing and repassing within sight, between London, Shields, and Sunderland), his master was willing to indulge him, and gave up his indentures.

*Louisa.*—What befel him after this ?

*Frederic.*—He was bound apprentice for seven years to a Mr. Walker, of Whitby, who, in conjunction with another person, possessed two ships that were employed in the coal trade. Mr. Walker appears to have formed a due estimate of his character and talents, and to have contributed all in his power to confirm and expand them.

*Sir Charles.*—No school of practical navigation is considered superior to that which the coal trade supplies, for drawing out, or forming the qualities which characterise a good seaman ; and it has generally been supposed that Mr. Cook, in this situation, acquired those habits of steady attention, cool resolution, undaunted firmness, and unwearied perseverance, which distinguished him through life. How long, Frederic, did he continue in the service of Mr. Walker ?

*Frederic.*—Until some time after the term of his apprenticeship had expired. Subsequently to this, in the spring of 1755, when hostilities broke out between England and France, and there was a hot press for seamen, Mr. Cook happened to be in the river Thames with the ship to which he belonged. At first he concealed himself, to avoid being pressed ; but reflecting, that it might be difficult, notwithstanding all his vigilance, to elude discovery or escape pursuit, he determined to enter voluntarily into his majesty's service, and to seek his future fortune in the royal navy. Accordingly he went to a rendezvous at Wapping, and offered himself to an officer of the *Eagle* man-of-war, a ship of sixty guns. To this ship Captain (afterwards Sir Hugh) Palliser was appointed, in the month of October, 1755 ;

and when he took the command, he found in her James Cook, whom he soon distinguished to be an able, active, and diligent seaman. All the officers spoke highly in his favour; and the captain was so well pleased with his behaviour, that he gave him every encouragement in his power.

*Edmund.*—His continued good conduct, as an active and intelligent seaman, was the cause of his promotion in 1759, to the post of master; and he afterwards sailed in the *Mercury*, to assist in the reduction of Quebec. The service in which Mr. Cook was employed during the famous siege of this town was a difficult and dangerous one: he was directed to survey the river St. Lawrence, some part of which lay immediately in front of the French camp; and he performed the task with the minutest and most scrupulous accuracy.

*Mr. Allen.*—He made so correct a chart of the river that no other survey has been found necessary; yet there is reason to believe that before this time he had never used a pencil in drawing. We see, in this part of his history, what difficulties may be overcome by persevering exertion, as well as by rapidity of intellect.

*Sir Charles.* — He was subsequently and advantageously employed in other surveys.

*Edmund.*—After the reduction of Quebec, Mr. Cook was appointed master of the Northumberland man-of-war, in which he continued at Halifax during the winter.

*Mr. Allen.*—Though he does not seem to have had at this time any active public employment, he did not pass his time in trifling or frivolous pursuits.

*Edmund.*—So far from this, sir, he now had leisure to obtain a knowledge of those branches of science which hitherto he had had no means of studying. He read Euclid, and closely applied himself to the study of astronomy, and other branches of science connected with his profession. The books of which he had the assistance were few in number; but his industry enabled

him to supply many defects, and to make a progress far superior to what could be expected from the advantages he enjoyed.

*Sir Charles.*—After this, Mr. Cook was employed in the recapture of Newfoundland, and in a survey of that important island.

*Edmund.*—He was so, sir; and wherever he went, or in whatever service he was employed, he exhibited so unremitted an attention to fulfil the duties imposed upon him, that the most satisfactory testimonies to his character were given by all the officers under whom he served.

*Frederic.*—Mr. Cook, subsequently to his survey of Newfoundland, was appointed to an official situation, that of marine surveyor of Newfoundland and Labrador; and that he might the better execute the duties of his office, a schooner was placed under his command. The tendency of his mind to explore whatever was unknown in geography, induced him to go beyond the mere line of his duty; for he not only published charts of the coast of Newfoundland, which, like every thing else that he undertook, possessed an extreme degree of accuracy; but he also explored the interior parts of the island, and attained a more complete knowledge of them than had ever been acquired before. He continued in his official situation till the year 1767, when he resigned it, and returned to England.

*Lady Irwin.*—This could not have been very long before the commencement of his first voyage round the world.

*Frederic.*—About twelve months. Before the return of Wallis and Carteret, it was resolved that another voyage of a similar description should be undertaken.

*Louisa.*—With what design?

*Frederic.*—Generally to increase the knowledge of geography and navigation, but particularly for the improvement of astronomical science. It having been calculated by astronomers, that a transit of the planet



Venus over the sun's disk would happen in 1769, it was judged that the best place for observing it would be in some of the islands of the South Sea. This was a matter of great importance in astronomy, and excited the attention of foreign nations as well as of our own. A memorial was consequently addressed on the subject to his majesty, by the Royal Society; and a ship was directed to be fitted out at the expense of the government, for conveying such scientific men to the South Sea, as that society should think proper to name. The command of this important expedition was given to Mr. Cook, who had previously been appointed a lieutenant in the royal navy.

As Edmund has prepared an abstract of his voyage, he will, no doubt, wish to relate the mode of its equipment.

*Sir Charles.*—Will you favour us, Edmund, with an account of this?

*Edmund.*—Most willingly, sir. The choice of a proper vessel was left entirely to Mr. Cook; and he fixed upon a ship, called the *Endeavour*, of three hundred and seventy tons burthen, that had formerly been employed in the coal trade. Every precaution was taken, and every preparation made, that could most effectually and completely secure the objects for which the voyage was planned. The ship had ten carriage and twelve swivel guns, and was furnished with an ample store of ammunition, and other necessities; and with provisions for eighteen months. The number of persons who went out was eighty-four, besides the commander.

*Louisa.*—What were the names of the scientific gentlemen who accompanied him?

*Edmund.*—Mr. Charles Green, an assistant at the observatory of Greenwich, was appointed, in conjunction with the lieutenant, to superintend the astronomical part of the voyage. Mr. (afterwards Sir Joseph) Banks, and Dr. Solander, an eminent Swedish naturalist, offered their services for the extension of natural knowledge.

It must be remarked, that the object of the intended voyage was not confined to the observation of the transit of Venus: Lieutenant Cook was also directed to examine the Pacific Ocean with accuracy, and to extend, as far as lay in his power, the discoveries in that part of the world.

NARRATIVE OF COOK'S FIRST VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

On the twenty-seventh of May, 1768, Lieutenant Cook was appointed to the command of the *Endeavour*, and on the twenty-sixth of August following, he sailed from Plymouth. The first point of his destination was the island of Madeira, where he arrived in about eighteen days after his departure from England. Here he laid in an additional stock of beef, water, and wine; and, in the night of the eighteenth of September, proceeded on his voyage. The next place at which he arrived was the Rio de Janeiro, on the coast of Brazil. His object here was chiefly to obtain a supply of water and other necessities. These having been taken on board, he sailed from Rio, on the seventh of December.

His course now was nearly south. In about six weeks he arrived at the entrance of the Strait of Le Maire: and, on the ensuing day, anchored his ship in the Bay of Good Success. While the *Endeavour* was in this station, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and two other gentlemen, with their attendants and servants, and two seamen to carry their baggage, landed, with a view to penetrate as far as they could into the country, and return at night. The distance proved much greater than they expected; and, by the difficulties they had to encounter, in passing through pathless woods, and across swamps covered with bushes, their progress was so much retarded that it was found impossible for them to get back to the ship before the next morning. When they set out the weather was fine, like one of our bright days in May: but before night it became gloomy and cold, with sudden blasts of

piercing wind accompanied with snow. Dr. Solander, in consequence of the experience he had acquired in having more than once crossed the mountains which divide Sweden from Norway, entreated his companions to keep constantly in motion, and not to yield (whatever pain the effort might cost them) to an inclination to sleep; which, he informed them, would be brought on by the extreme cold. "Whoever sits down," said he, "will sleep, and whoever sleeps will wake no more." Like many other teachers, the doctor failed in enforcing his doctrine by his own practice. He was the first who found the temptation to sleep become irresistible; and he at length yielded to it, notwithstanding the entreaties, the remonstrances, and even the force, that were employed by Mr. Banks on the occasion. Happily a fire had been kindled; and Mr. Banks at length succeeded in awaking the doctor. He had been in a profound sleep about five minutes, and in this short space of time, had almost lost the use of his limbs: and his feet were so shrunk, that his shoes fell off. One of the seamen and a negro actually died. It was a dreadful testimony of the severity of the climate, that this event took place in the midst of summer in that part of the world.

In the passage through the Strait of Le Maire, Lieutenant Cook and his associates had an opportunity of becoming acquainted with the inhabitants of the adjoining country. Here it was that they saw human nature in its lowest form. The natives appeared to be the most destitute and forlorn, as well as the most stupid, of human beings. Their lives are spent in wandering about the dreary wastes that surround them; and their dwellings are no other than wretched hovels of sticks and grass, which not only admit the wind, but the snow and the rain. They are almost naked; and so devoid of every convenience which is furnished by the rudest art, that they have not so much as an implement to dress their food. Nevertheless, they seemed to have no wish for acquiring more than they possessed.

Thirty-three days were occupied in doubling Cape Horn ; and Lieutenant Cook, by his accurate ascertainment of the latitude and longitude of all the places he came to, and by his instructions to future voyagers, has performed the most essential services to this part of his navigation.

It was on the twenty-sixth of January that the Endeavour left Cape Horn ; and on the thirteenth of April, she arrived at the island of Otaheite, and came to an anchor in the Bay of Matavai. In the course of the voyage several islands had been discovered, to which the names of Lagoon Island, Thrumb Cap, Bow Island, The Groups, Bird, and Chain Island, were given. It appeared that most of these were inhabited, and the verdure and groves of palm-trees, that were visible upon some of them, gave them the aspect of a terrestrial paradise to men who, excepting the dreary hills of Terra del Fuego, had of late seen only sky and water.

As the stay of the English at Otaheite was likely to be of some continuance, and as it much depended on the manner in which traffic should be carried on with the inhabitants, Lieutenant Cook, with great good sense and humanity, drew up a set of regulations for the behaviour of his people, and gave it in command that they should be punctually observed.

One of the first things that occupied his attention, after his arrival, was to prepare for the execution of his grand commission. For this purpose he went on shore, and fixed on a place, distant from any habitation of the natives, and commanded by the guns of the ship. Here he threw up a small fort, and mounted upon it six swivel guns, and got every thing ready for making the astronomical observations. These proceedings gave some uneasiness to the inhabitants ; but their fears were quieted, when they were assured, by signs, that the ground which had thus been enclosed was wanted only for a certain number of days, and then would be quitted. Indeed so scrupulous was Mr. Cook, as to invading their property,

that every stake that was used in the construction of the fort was purchased; and not a tree was cut down till the consent of the inhabitants had first been obtained.

While the above work was in progress, Mr. Cook having placed over it a guard of thirteen marines and a midshipman, he and the gentlemen with him set out upon a little excursion into the woods of the country. They had not, however, gone far, before they were brought back by a very disagreeable event. One of the Indians, who had remained about the tent after the lieutenant and his friends had left it, had watched an opportunity of taking the sentinel unawares, and had snatched away his musket. The midshipman commanded the party to fire, which they inhumanly did, into the midst of a crowd consisting of more than a hundred persons. Happily none were even wounded; but afterwards the thief was pursued and shot dead. Mr. Cook was much displeased with the conduct of the officer; and used every method in his power to dispel the terrors, and regain the confidence of the Indians. This, after considerable difficulty, he was able to do.

A circumstance occurred not long afterwards, in which he gave a signal proof of his regard to justice, and of his care to preserve the inhabitants from injury. The butcher of the Endeavour had wanted to purchase of a woman, the wife of one of the Otaheitan chiefs, a stone hatchet for a nail. To this bargain she refused to accede; on which the fellow caught up the hatchet and threw down the nail; threatening that, if she made any resistance, he would murder her. The affair was reported to Mr. Cook, and the guilt of the butcher proved. Shortly afterwards the chief and his women, with others of the natives, were on board the ship. Mr. Cook ordered the offender to be brought before them, and, after recapitulating the accusation and the proof of it, he gave orders for the man's immediate punishment. While the butcher was stripped, and tied up to the rigging, the Indians preserved a fixed attention, and waited for the

event in silent suspense. But as soon as the first stroke was inflicted, they interfered with great agitation, and earnestly entreated that the rest of the punishment might be remitted; and, when they found their intercessions were ineffectual, they manifested their compassion by tears.

The astronomical instruments having been conveyed on shore, the quadrant, which had not previously been taken out of the packing case, and was of considerable weight, was stolen and carried away, although a sentinel had been posted within a few yards of it. By judicious and spirited exertions, however, it was recovered. This was an event of great importance, as, without this instrument, the grand object of the voyage could not have been accomplished.

For some time provisions of every description were bartered only for beads and other trifles. But the market becoming slack, the navigators were obliged for the first time, on the eighth of May, to bring out nails; and such was the effect of this new commodity, that a nail, about four inches long, would purchase twenty coconuts and bread-fruit in proportion.

As the day for executing the grand purpose of the voyage approached, Lieutenant Cook determined to send out two parties to observe the transit of Venus from different situations. Accordingly he despatched Mr. Gore, with other gentlemen, and furnished with proper instruments, to Eimeo, a neighbouring island; and Mr. Hicks, and others, to a convenient spot in Otaheite, eastward of the principal station. The weather on the third of June, the day on which the observation was to be made, proved fine. The sun rose without a cloud, and shone with great brilliancy the whole day; so that the observation was made in every quarter, and the latitude of the observatory was found to be seventeen degrees, twenty-nine minutes, fifteen seconds; and the longitude one hundred and forty-nine degrees, thirty-two minutes, thirty seconds, west of Greenwich.

The pleasure which Lieutenant Cook and his friends



derived from having thus successfully accomplished the first grand object of the voyage was not a little abated by the conduct of some of the ship's company, who, while the attention of the officers was engrossed by the transit of Venus, broke into the store-rooms, and stole a great quantity of spike nails. This was an evil of a public and serious nature; for these nails, if injudiciously circulated among the Indians, would be productive of irreparable injury to the English, by reducing the value of iron, their staple commodity. One of the thieves, from whom only seven nails were recovered, was detected; but, though the punishment of two dozen lashes was inflicted upon him, he would not impeach any of his accomplices.

To extend the knowledge of navigation, and the sphere of discovery, objects which Lieutenant Cook always kept steadily in view, he set out in the pinnace on the 26th of June, accompanied by Mr. Banks, to make the circuit of the island. By this expedition he obtained an acquaintance with the several districts of Otaheite, the chiefs who presided over them, and a variety of curious circumstances respecting the manners and customs of the inhabitants. On the first of July, he returned to the fort at Matavi, having found the circuit of the island to be about thirty leagues.

The circumnavigation of Otaheite was followed by an expedition, headed by Mr. Banks, to trace the river near which the ship was anchored up the valley from which it issues, and to examine how far its banks were inhabited. During this excursion, Mr. Banks discerned many traces of subterraneous fire. The stones displayed evident tokens of having been burnt; and even the clay upon the hills had the same appearance.

Another valuable employment of Mr. Banks was the planting of a great quantity of the seeds of water-melons, oranges, lemons, limes, and other plants and trees, which he had collected at Rio de Janeiro. For these he prepared ground on each side of the fort, and

selected as many varieties of soil as could be found. He gave, also, liberally of these seeds to the natives, and planted many of them in the woods.

After a residence of nearly three months in the island, Lieutenant Cook at length began to prepare for his departure; and he had entertained hopes that he should be able to depart without either giving or receiving any further offence; but in this he was disappointed. Two of the marines had deserted from the fort, had retired into the interior, and married Otaheitan women, in a determination to remain in the island. As it was of the utmost importance to recover these men, it was intimated to some of the chiefs, who were in the fort with their women, among whom was the princess Oberea, that they would not be permitted to return to their homes, until the fugitives were recovered. This procedure, after some difficulty, was attended with success. The marines were restored, and the chiefs released from confinement.

Tupia, the first minister of Oberea while she was in the height of her power, and the chief priest of the country, had particularly attached himself to the English, during their residence at Otaheite. This person had often expressed a desire to accompany them from the island; and when they were ready to depart, he came on board, with a boy about thirteen years of age, and entreated that he might be permitted to proceed with them on their voyage. To have such a person in the Endeavour was desirable on many accounts; and, therefore, Lieutenant Cook gladly acceded to his proposal.

On the thirteenth of July, the English weighed anchor; and, as soon as the ship was under sail, the Indians, except Tupia and his boy, took their leave with the most earnest expressions of sorrow. He sustained himself in this distressing scene with a firmness and resolution, but accompanied with a manly feeling of sorrow at departing from his friends, which were truly honourable to him.

It would be a deviation from the plan of this narrative to enter into an account of the nature, productions, inhabitants, customs, and manners of the countries which were discovered or visited by Mr. Cook; or to give a detail of the nautical, geographical, and astronomical observations. It will be sufficient here to notice, that our commander did not depart from Otaheite without having accumulated an important store of information and instruction for the enlargement of knowledge and the benefit of navigation.

While the *Endeavour* proceeded on her voyage under an easy sail, Tupia informed Lieutenant Cook, that, at four of the neighbouring islands, Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola, hogs, fowls, and other refreshments, which had latterly been sparingly supplied at Otaheite, might be procured in great plenty. The first two of these islands he described to be well peopled, and as large as Otaheite.

On the sixteenth of July, the *Endeavour* being near the north-west part of Huaheine, some canoes approached the ship. In one of these was the king of the island, and his wife. At first the people in the canoes seemed afraid; but when they saw Tupia their apprehensions were in part removed, and at length their majesties and several others ventured on board the ship. Their astonishment at every thing that was shown to them was very great. When they had become somewhat more familiar, Mr. Cook was given to understand that the king was called Oree, and that he proposed, as a mark of amity, their making an exchange of names. To this our commander readily consented; and, during the remainder of the time they were together, the lieutenant was Oree, and his majesty was Cookee. In the afternoon, the *Endeavour* came to an anchor in a small harbour on the west side of the island.

Mr. Cook, accompanied by the other gentlemen, made three or four excursions into this island, and found that the inhabitants nearly resembled those of Otaheite, and

that the productions of the country were exactly similar. In the exchange of commodities, however, they displayed a caution and hesitation which rendered the dealing with them slow and tedious. When the Endeavour was about to sail, Mr. Cook gave to the king, among other presents, a small pewter plate, on which was stamped this inscription : " His Britannic Majesty's ship Endeavour, Lieutenant James Cook commander, 16th July, 1769, Huaheine." This he thought would be as lasting a testimony that the English had first discovered this island as any he could provide.

He next sailed for Ulietea, in a harbour of which island he anchored on the ensuing day. Tupia expressed considerable apprehension that the navigators, if they landed at Ulietea, would be exposed to the attacks of the men at Bolabola, who had lately conquered the island, and of whom he entertained a very formidable idea. This, however, did not deter Mr. Cook and the other gentlemen from going immediately on shore, nor did Tupia hesitate to accompany them. The lieutenant caused the whole coast of this island to be examined. During the progress of this examination, Mr. Banks and others employed themselves in trading with the natives, and in examining the productions and curiosities of the country; but they saw nothing worthy of notice, excepting some human jaw-bones, which, like scalps among the Indians of North America, were trophies of war, and had probably been hung up by the warriors of Bolabola, as a memorial of their conquest.

In passing out of the harbour to proceed on their voyage, the ship appears to have been in imminent danger of being wrecked by striking against the edge of a coral rock. Many rocks of this description are found near the islands of the South Sea; and though they are perhaps not visible above the surface of the water, they are often extremely dangerous.

After a tedious navigation of some days, during which several small islands were seen, and the long-boat had

landed at Otaha, Lieutenant Cook returned to Ulietea, but to a different part of it from that which he had visited before. In a harbour on the west side of the island, he came to an anchor on the first of August. This measure was necessary, in order to stop a leak that had been discovered in the ship, and also to take in an addition of ballast.

Two gentlemen went on shore, and the reception they met with from the natives was respectful in the highest degree. During an intercourse which lasted several days, it appeared that the terrors which Tupia had expressed of the Bolabola conquerors were wholly groundless. Even Opoony, the formidable king of that island, treated our navigators with respect. He sent Mr. Cook a present of three hogs, some fowls, and several pieces of cloth, together with a considerable quantity of plantains, cocoa-nuts, and other refreshments. This present was accompanied with a message, that on the ensuing day he intended to pay the lieutenant a visit. He did not, however, make his appearance; but he sent three young females as his messengers, to ask for something in return for his present. In the afternoon, as the king would not go to the English, the English determined to go to the king. They did so; and, instead of a young and vigorous chief, as they had expected him to be, they found a feeble, withered, and decrepit old man, half blind with age.

The time which the carpenters had occupied in stopping the leak of the ship, having detained the voyagers longer at Ulietea than they intended, Lieutenant Cook resolved to give up the design he had formed of going on shore at Bolabola.

The cluster of islands, amongst which the English had now passed somewhat more than three weeks, were six in number; the four that have been mentioned, and two others, called by the natives Tubai, and Maurua. There were also several smaller islands; and as these were all contiguous to each other, the

lieutenant gave them the general appellation of Society Islands.

On the ninth of August, the voyagers pursued their course southward, till they arrived at an island which Tupia informed them was called Oheteroa. The disposition of the inhabitants of this island appeared so hostile to any intercourse, and the shore was so difficult of access, that Mr. Cook left it, without even attempting to land.

About two months afterwards land was discovered in latitude thirty-eight degrees south, and longitude one hundred and sixty-eight degrees fifty minutes east. It appeared to be of great extent. Four or five ranges of hills, rising one above another, were observed; and, beyond these, a chain of mountains of enormous height. The general opinion of the navigators was, that they had now discovered a continent in the southern hemisphere. The land they saw was, however, only a part of New Zealand, an extensive island which had originally been discovered by Tasman, a Dutch navigator, more than a hundred years before.

The ship was anchored; and lieutenant Cook, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, with a party of armed men, went on shore. Whilst they were proceeding towards some of the natives whom they observed at a little distance, four men armed with spears rushed out of the woods, and attempted to seize one of the boats. This was the commencement of an affray in which, during the absence of the lieutenant, one of the Indians was shot. Notwithstanding this unfortunate occurrence, the lieutenant, still anxious to establish an intercourse with the inhabitants, landed on the following day, accompanied by the gentlemen and Tupia, with several seamen and marines. About fifty of the inhabitants were seated upon the ground, apparently waiting their approach. They then suddenly started up, and every one produced either a long spear, or a small weapon made of a kind of green stone. These they flourished with apparently the



most hostile determination, at the same time making signs for the gentlemen immediately to depart. Tupia was directed to speak to them. With some difficulty they were prevailed with to listen to him; when it was perceived, with great pleasure, that he was perfectly understood. His language and that of the New Zealanders were the same, except only some little diversity of dialect. He informed them that the voyagers only wanted provisions and water, for which they were willing to give iron in exchange, the properties of which he endeavoured to explain to them. They seemed willing to trade; but Topia was convinced, by the tenor of the conversation, that their intentions were unfriendly. No terms could be entered into with them; and they made various attempts to steal such articles as they thought they could carry away in safety. One of them snatched a hanger from one of the gentlemen, and carried it off with a shout of exultation; the others at the same time indicating the most hostile designs. It was, therefore, considered necessary to fire upon them; and the man who had stolen the hanger was killed, and two or three others were wounded. Some subsequent attempts on the part of the English were made towards reconciliation, but to no purpose; and on the eleventh of October the lieutenant weighed anchor, and departed from this inhospitable coast.

His determination was now to sail round New Zealand. This he did; and during nearly six months that the examination of it occupied, he obtained much information relative to the inhabitants of the different shores, and many important facts illustrative of its navigation and geography. With regard to the inhabitants, it was clearly proved that they were eaters of human flesh.

As it will be impossible regularly to pursue the course of our commander round New Zealand, I shall select only a few facts that have been recorded relative to it.

In one instance, during the course of a traffic which was attempted to be carried on for some fish, little Tayeto,

Tupia's boy, was leaning over the ship's side to hand up what was purchased. While he was thus occupied, one of the Zealanders suddenly seized him, dragged him into a canoe, and paddled off with all possible speed. An action so violent rendered it necessary that the marines should be ordered to fire. The order was given, and one man dropped. This occasioned the Indians to quit their hold of the youth; who instantly leaped into the water, swam towards the ship, and was rescued.



The acts of hostility that were experienced from the savage inhabitants of the different shores of New Zealand, were of almost daily occurrence; and the utmost judgment and self-command were requisite in the lieutenant and his officers, to conduct themselves with propriety towards them.

On Friday, the tenth of November, Lieutenant Cook, accompanied by Mr. Banks and the other gentlemen, went with two boats to examine a large river that

empties itself into a bay on the coast of New Zealand, which he named Mercury Bay. As this was a situation which abounded with numerous conveniencies, the lieutenant has taken care to point them out, for the benefit of future navigators. If any occasion should ever render it necessary for a ship either to winter here, or to stay for a considerable length of time, tents might be built on a high point or peninsula in this place, upon ground sufficiently spacious for the purpose; and they might easily be made impregnable to the whole force of the adjacent country.

On the fifth of December, the Endeavour was in the most imminent danger of being wrecked. About ten o'clock at night she was suddenly becalmed; and the tide or current drove her towards the land so fast, that before any measures could be taken for her security, she was within a cable's length of the breakers. In this crisis, the pinnace being hoisted out to take the ship in tow, and the men exerting themselves to the utmost, a faint breeze happily sprang up off the land; and the navigators perceived with unspeakable delight that the vessel made her way from the shore. Mr. Cook and his friends now thought that all danger was over; but about an hour afterwards the ship struck. The concussion threw them into the utmost alarm; but the rock on which she had struck being to the windward, she went off without having received the slightest damage.

On the fourteenth of January, 1770, the navigators arrived in a bay of New Zealand, which the lieutenant named Queen Charlotte's Sound. Here, as the bottom of the ship had become extremely foul, he proposed to careen her, to repair some defects, and to obtain a supply of wood and water. The adjacent country was one continued forest of vast extent, through which ran many streams of excellent water. The gentlemen landed; and having carried a net on shore with them, they hauled it once or twice, and with such success, that different sorts of fish were caught to the amount of nearly three hun-

dred weight. These furnished a very agreeable refreshment to the ship's company.

When Lieutenant Cook and some others landed on the sixteenth, they saw an Indian family, among whom they found horrid and indisputable proofs of the custom of eating human flesh.

On the next day a delightful object engaged the attention of the voyagers. The ship lying at the distance of somewhat less than a quarter of a mile from the shore, they were awakened in the night by the singing of an incredible number of birds, which seemed to strain their throats in emulation of each other. This wild melody was infinitely superior to any they had ever heard of the same kind, and seemed to be like small bells, most exquisitely tuned. Upon inquiry they were informed, that the birds here always begin to sing about two hours after midnight; and that, continuing their music till sun-rise, they were silent during the rest of the day.

When on the nineteenth the armourer's forge was set up, and all hands on board were busy in careening, and in other necessary operations about the vessel, some Indians who had brought a quantity of fish exchanged them for nails, of which they had begun to perceive the use and value.

A few days after this, the lieutenant, taking a seaman with him, ascended one of the adjacent hills. On reaching its summit, he saw the sea on the eastern side of the country, and observed a passage leading from it to that on the west, a little eastward of the entrance of the inlet where the ship lay. The main land, which was on the south-east side of this inlet, appeared to be a narrow ridge of very high hills, and to form part of the south-west side of the strait. On the opposite side, the land stretched eastward as far as the eye could reach; and to the south-east there was discerned an opening to the sea, which washed the eastern coast.

The next day was employed in further surveys and discoveries; and, on the twenty-sixth, from another hill

of very considerable height, he had a full view of the strait which passed between the east and western seas. This determined Mr. Cook to search the passage with the ship as soon as she was ready for sea.

The inhabitants of this part of the coast had proved more mild and hospitable than any who had hitherto been seen in New Zealand. At their invitation the lieutenant, accompanied by his friends and Tupia, went to visit a town not far distant. It consisted of between eighty and a hundred houses; and was built upon a small island or rock, so difficult of access that the voyagers gratified their curiosity at the risk of their lives. They were received in the most friendly manner, conducted through the whole place, and freely shown all that it contained. In exchange for a few nails and ribbons, and some paper, they obtained from the inhabitants of this town a quantity of dried fish, which was nearly sufficient to fill their boat.

The Endeavour being again ready for sea, she sailed on the sixth of February; and standing over to the eastward to enter the strait, she was borne along for many hours by a current so rapid and tremendous, that in several instances she narrowly escaped being dashed to pieces against the rocks. After this she still continued on an easterly course along the strait; and at the end of two days, the lieutenant ascertained beyond a doubt that what had usually been called New Zealand, consists of two extensive islands, separated by this strait, the narrowest part of which appeared to be four or five leagues in width.

The ascertaining of New Zealand to be an island did not conclude Lieutenant Cook's examination of the nature, situation, and extent of the country. He completed his circumnavigation, by ranging from Cape Turnagain southward along the eastern coast of Poenam-moo, round Cape South, and back to the western entrance of the strait which he had passed, and which has very properly been named Cook's Strait. Finding it

now requisite to replenish his water-casks, and obtain additional supplies of wood, he entered a bay not far distant from Queen Charlotte's Sound, already mentioned, and to which he has given the name of Admiralty Bay.

The ship was again ready for sea on the thirtieth. A consultation of all the officers was held, respecting the course which it would be advisable to steer; and it was resolved that their course should now be homeward by the East Indies. With this view it was further resolved that they should steer westward till they arrived at the east coast of New Holland; and that they should then follow the direction of that coast northward, to ascertain its termination.

*Sir Charles.*—As the voyagers are now contemplating their return homeward, and as the remainder of the narrative may be too long to be conveniently read to night, we had perhaps better defer it till to-morrow.

*Edmund.*—I am quite prepared, sir, with the whole, but if it be your wish thus to divide it, I shall have great pleasure in complying with it.



## SIXTEENTH EVENING.

As soon as the party, at the usual hour, was assembled, Edmund Irving resumed his narrative as follows:

### CONTINUATION OF THE NARRATIVE OF COOK'S FIRST VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

THE navigators left New Zealand on Saturday, the thirty-first of March, 1770, and pursued their voyage westward, for nineteen days, when they came within sight of New Holland, or New South Wales, as the eastern coast of that country is now called. On the twenty-eighth of April the ship was anchored in a bay which, from the great number and variety of uncommon



plants that were subsequently observed upon its shores, was named Botany Bay.

The boats were manned ; and the lieutenant and his friends, having Tupia of their party, rowed towards the shore. As soon as they approached the rocks, two of the inhabitants, armed with lances about ten feet long, came forward to dispute the landing. They called to the strangers in a loud tone, and a harsh and dissonant language, of which Tupia, who had been able freely to converse with the New Zealanders, understood not a word. After this they brandished their weapons, and though they were but two to forty, they seemed resolved to defend their coast to the utmost. The lieutenant, who could not but admire their courage, and who was unwilling that hostilities should commence with such an inequality of force, ordered his boat to lie upon her oars. He and the other gentlemen then parleyed with them by signs ; and, to obtain their good will, he threw them nails, beads, and other trifles. With these they appeared to be well pleased. After this the lieutenant endeavoured to make them understand that he wanted water, and attempted to convince them that he had no injurious designs against them. Being willing to interpret the waving of their hands as an invitation to approach, the boat put into the shore ; but no sooner was this perceived, than it was opposed by the two Indians. The only resource now left for Mr. Cook was to fire a musket between them ; which being done, the youngest of them dropped a bundle of lances on the rock, but instantly recollecting himself, he snatched them up again in great haste. A stone was then thrown, upon which the lieutenant ordered a musket to be fired with small shot. This struck one of the men upon the legs, and he immediately ran off. Mr. Cook, who now hoped that the contest was over, landed with his party ; but they had scarcely quitted the boat when the Indian returned, having only left the rock to fetch a shield or target for his defence. As soon as he came up, he and

his comrade threw each of them a lance into the midst of the English, but happily without injuring any one. At the firing of a third musket the two men ran entirely away.

After this the gentlemen repaired to some huts which they saw at a little distance, and which had been deserted by all the inhabitants except a few children. Into these huts they threw some beads, ribbons, pieces of cloth, and other presents, which they hoped would procure them the good-will of the inhabitants. But when they returned on the ensuing day, they had the mortification to find that the presents they had left had not been removed; and that not an Indian was to be seen.

Several of the natives, however, appeared on the thirtieth, but they could not be engaged in any intercourse whatever. They approached within a certain distance, and, after shouting several times, returned into the woods. Having done this once more, Mr. Cook followed them himself, alone and unarmed, a considerable way along the shore, but without prevailing with them to stop.

On the first of May, he resolved to make an excursion into the country. Accordingly, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and seven other persons, all properly accoutred for the expedition, he set out, and repaired first to the huts near the shore, whither some of the Indians continued every day to resort. The presents that had been left there before had not yet been taken away. The gentlemen, therefore, added others of still greater value, consisting of cloth, beads, combs, and looking-glasses. After this they went into the interior of the country, where they saw many houses of the inhabitants, but met with only one of the people, who ran away as soon as he was discovered. At every place where they went they left presents, hoping that at length they might procure the confidence and good-will of the people. They perceived some traces of animals: and the

trees abounded with birds of various kinds, among which were many of exquisite beauty.

After this, at different times, several of the inhabitants were seen, and every possible means was taken to procure their good-will; but no intercourse whatever could be established with them. They were of dark colour, and entirely naked. Of their mode of life little knowledge could be obtained; but it did not appear that they were either numerous, or that they lived in societies. They seemed to be scattered about in families along the coast, and in the woods.

The navigators left Botany Bay at day-break on Sunday, the sixth of May, and proceeded on their voyage along the coast in a northerly direction. The land near the shore was in general low and sandy; but in some places it exhibited a pleasing variety of ridges, hills, valleys and plains, all richly clad with wood. About ten days after their departure, they observed, with their glasses, about twenty of the natives walking along the shore, each with a large bundle upon his back. Not one of these people, however, though they watched for more than an hour, was seen to stop and look towards the ship; though it was impossible they should not have discerned her, and although she must have been the most stupendous and unaccountable object they had ever beheld.

The ship was anchored on the twenty-second of May, in an inlet which, from a remarkably large bird of the bustard tribe having been shot on the adjacent shore, was named Bustard Bay. The lieutenant, accompanied by the other gentlemen, with Tupia, and a party of marines, went to some distance into the interior of the country. During their absence about twenty of the natives came down to the beach, and after looking a little while at the ship, went away. The gentlemen found various proofs, in smoke, fires, and the fragments of recent food, that the country was inhabited; yet not a house, nor even the remains of a house, could be observed.

Hence it was believed that these people were destitute of dwellings as well as of clothes ; and that, like the savage animals by which they were surrounded, they even passed their nights in the open air.

Proceeding hence still northward, an inlet of the shore was a few days afterward observed. This the lieutenant thought might be a convenient situation for laying the ship ashore and cleaning her bottom. He landed, in company with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia, in search of a place adapted to this operation. They found the walking exceedingly troublesome in consequence of the ground being covered with a kind of grass, the seeds of which were very sharp and bearded. Whenever these seeds stuck into their clothes, which happened at every step, they worked forward by means of the beard, till they got at the flesh. Another disagreeable circumstance was, that they were incessantly tormented with the stings of a large kind of gnats, called musquitos. They soon met with several places where the ship might conveniently be laid ashore ; but were much disappointed in not being able to discover any fresh water. In proceeding up the country they found several gum-trees, upon the branches of which were ants' nests made of clay, and each as big as a bushel. The ants by which the nests were inhabited, were small, and of a white colour. Upon another species of the gum-tree was found a small black ant, that had perforated all the twigs, and, having worked out the pith, occupied the pipe in which it had been contained. Notwithstanding this, the parts in which these insects, to an amazing number, had formed a lodgment, bore leaves and flowers, and appeared to be entirely in a flourishing state. Butterflies were found in such multitudes, that the account of them seems almost to be incredible. The air was so crowded with them for the space of three or four acres, that millions might be seen in every direction ; and the branches and twigs of the trees were at the same time covered with others that were not upon the wing.

Though the curiosity of Mr. Cook and his friends was gratified by the sight of these various objects, they were disappointed in the attainment of their main purpose, the discovery of fresh water. This determined him to make but a short stay; and from his want of success in this particular he named the inlet Thirsty Sound. Hitherto Mr. Cook had conducted his vessel in safety, for an extent of more than one thousand three hundred miles along the coast of New South Wales. But on the tenth of June, as he was pursuing his course from a bay to which he had given the name of Trinity Bay, she fell into a situation as critical and dangerous as any that is recorded in the history of navigation. During a clear moonlight night, while she was sailing with a fine breeze, she was suddenly discovered to be in shallow water. This excited considerable alarm, but it subsided on soon afterwards finding that the water deepened. The ship



proceeded in safety, the moon still shining brightly, till near eleven o'clock, when suddenly the water shoaled from twenty to seventeen fathom, and almost immediately

afterwards she struck upon a rock, and remained immovable, except so far as she was influenced by the heaving of the surge, that beat her against the crags of the rock upon which she lay. A few moments brought every person upon deck with countenances suited to the horror of their situation. The navigators knew that they could not be very near the shore, and there was too much reason to conclude that they were upon a rock of coral; which, on account of the sharpness of its points and the roughness of its surface, is more fatal to ships than any other. On examination the vessel was found to have been lifted over a ledge of the rock, and to lie in a hollow within it. To complete the scene of distress, it appeared, from the light of the moon, that the sheathing boards from the bottom of the ship were floating away on all sides; so that every moment was making way for the whole ship's company to be swallowed up by the sea. There was now no hope for safety but by lightening her. That no time might be lost in doing this, the water in the casks was immediately started in the hold, and pumped up; six guns, being all that were upon the deck, a quantity of iron and stone ballast, casks, hoop-staves, oil jars, decayed stores, and various other things, were thrown overboard. Every one exerted himself, not only without murmuring and discontent, but even with an alacrity which almost approached to cheerfulness. So sensible, at the same time, were the men of the awfulness of their situation, that not an oath was heard among them: the detestable habit of profane swearing was instantly subdued by the dread of incurring guilt when a speedy death was in view.

At daylight of the following morning, the ship's company had a full prospect of their danger. Land was seen, but it was at least twenty-four miles distant; and there was no island in the intermediate space upon which, if the vessel had gone to pieces, they might have been set ashore by the boats, and carried thence to the main. Gradually, however, the wind died away, and early in



the forenoon it became a dead calm; a circumstance peculiarly happy in the order of Divine Providence, for if it had blown hard, the vessel must inevitably have been destroyed. High-water being expected at eleven in the morning, and every thing being made ready to heave the vessel off if she should float, to the inexpressible surprise and concern of our navigators, she did not float by a foot and a half. Hence it became necessary to lighten her still more, and every thing was thrown overboard that could possibly be spared. Hitherto the vessel had not admitted much water; but as the tide fell, the water rushed in so fast, that she could scarcely be kept free, though two pumps were incessantly worked. There was now no hope but from the tide at midnight; to prepare for taking the advantage of which the most vigorous efforts were exerted. About five o'clock in the afternoon the tide began to rise, but, at the same time, the leak increased to a most alarming degree. Two more pumps, therefore, were got ready, of which, unhappily, one would not work. Three pumps, however, were kept going; and at nine o'clock the ship righted. But the leak had gained so considerably, that it was imagined she must sink as soon as she ceased to be supported by the rock. It was, indeed, a dreadful circumstance to our commander and his people, that they were obliged to anticipate the floating of the vessel, not as an earnest of their deliverance, but as an event which probably might precipitate their destruction.

The fearful moment which was to determine the fate of the voyagers now drew on; and every one saw, in the countenances of his companions, the picture of his own sensations. They did not, however, give way to despair; and the utmost efforts were exerted both to subdue the influx of water, and to free the ship from her perilous situation. At length she floated; and it was no small consolation that she did not admit more water than she had done when upon the rock. Yet at this time the water was nearly four feet deep in the hold. The men

laboured incessantly, for more than twenty-four hours, to reduce the quantity of water, but it still flowed in so fast that they at length began to have little hope of final success. So great was now their fatigue, that none of them could work at the pumps more than five or six minutes together; after which, being totally exhausted, they threw themselves down successively upon the deck, though a stream of water, between three and four inches deep, was running over it from the pumps. Still, however, their exertions were unremitted; and at last the pumps began to gain upon the leak. This circumstance inspired new confidence, and hope inspired fresh vigour. As many hands as could be spared from the pumps were employed in getting up the anchors. The vessel was now clear of the rocks. The fore-top-mast and fore-yard were next erected; and there being a breeze from the sea, the ship was once more under sail, and stood in for the land.

Notwithstanding these favourable circumstances, the voyagers were still far from being in safety. The water continued to pour in a torrent through the leak in the bottom of the vessel. At this crisis an ingenious expedient was proposed and adopted. On the surface of one of the sails was loosely stitched a considerable quantity of oakum, or the hemp of untwisted ropes, and wool; and it was otherwise prepared so as to prevent the water from penetrating it. The sail was then drawn beneath the ship's bottom by ropes, which kept it extended. When it came under the leak, the suction that carried in the water, carried in with it the oakum and wool from the surface of the sail. The success of the expedient was answerable to the warmest expectations that had been formed; for the leak was thereby so far reduced, that, instead of gaining upon three pumps, it was easily kept under by one. The voyagers gradually approached the land; and on the fourteenth of June a small harbour was happily discovered, which was excellently adapted for repairing the defects of the ship, and putting her

into proper order for future navigation. This harbour, after some difficulty, they entered. Tents were immediately erected on the shore, the stores and provisions were landed, and every possible preparation was made for repairing the damages which the ship had sustained. It was not, however, till the twenty-second of June that an opportunity was afforded of examining the leak. In the place where it was found, the rocks had made their way through four planks, and even into the timbers; and the hole was as smooth as if it had been cut away by an instrument. In another part of the bottom was found sticking a large fragment of the rock upon which the vessel had struck. When this was taken out, it left a hole large enough to have sunk the ship even if there had been eight pumps instead of four. To this extraordinary circumstance it was providentially owing, that the water did not pour in with a violence which must have speedily involved the Endeavour and all her company in inevitable destruction.

When the ship arrived at her present station, many, both of the officers and crew, had begun to suffer from the scurvy. Most of them, however, soon recovered in consequence of having an abundant supply of fish, vegetables, and other fresh provisions. Among other articles of food a kind of cockles were found, of so enormous a size, that a single cockle was more than two men could eat; and three turtles were one day caught, which, together, weighed nearly eight hundred pounds.

Four Indians, natives of the adjacent country, came alongside the ship in a canoe. They were naked and of dark colour. Their hair was black, but not woolly; and their features were far from being disagreeable. They had lively eyes, and their teeth were even and white. The tone of their voice was soft and musical, and there was a flexibility in their organs of speech, which enabled them to repeat, with great facility, many of the words that were pronounced by the English. Three of these men returned on the following day,

accompanied by a fourth, who was a stranger, and distinguished by a very peculiar ornament. The bone of a bird, nearly as thick as the finger, and five or six inches in length, was thrust through a hole made in the gristle that divides the nostrils. On further examination it was found that all these people had the same part of the nose perforated ; that they had holes in their ears ; and that they wore bracelets, made of plaited hair, upon the upper part of their arms.

Though it was sufficiently ascertained that there were several inhabitants in the same neighbourhood, few of them were seen. In one instance, a party of ten visited the ship, and seeing several turtles on the deck were desirous of having one of them. This could not be permitted ; and, disappointed in their wishes, they leaped into their canoe, paddled towards the shore, and snatching a brand from under a pitch-kettle that was boiling, made a circuit to the windward of the tents of the navigators, and set fire to the grass as they ran along. This, which was dry as stubble, and five or six feet high, burnt with astonishing fury. A tent belonging to Mr. Banks would have been consumed, if that gentleman had not immediately caused it to be taken down, and carried upon the beach. Every part of the smith's forge that would burn was consumed. The fire spread far into the woods. Soon were these seen in a blaze, at the distance of nearly two miles ; and, in the night, the hills for many miles round were observed to be on fire.

Had this accident happened a little sooner, it might have produced very dreadful effects : for the gunpowder had not long been on board ; and the store tent, with all its valuables, had been removed but a few hours before.

The damage which the ship had sustained having been repaired, Mr. Cook got every thing in readiness for the continuation of his voyage. To the harbour in which she had been thus refitted, he gave the name of

the Endeavour River ; and early in the morning of the fourth of August, he was once more under sail. Great difficulties occurred in the course from the Endeavour river northward, owing to innumerable shoals and rocks which were scattered in every direction, and to the wind at intervals being very stormy. It would occupy too much time to recount his proceedings in this intricate navigation. They were conducted with a correctness of judgment, and a skill in nautical affairs, which have perhaps never been exceeded ; and with a degree of patience and perseverance on the part of his companions, which was truly exemplary.

At length the voyagers arrived at the northern termination of the coast of New Holland. This coast Mr. Cook had traced for many hundred miles ; he had examined all the harbours, bays, rivers, and islands situated upon it, from latitude thirty-eight, to latitude ten and a half degrees south. He had now an open sea westward, and he considered the dangers and fatigues of his voyage as drawing towards a conclusion.

On the twenty-third of August, he entered the channel which divides New Holland from New Guinea ; and, at day-break of the third of September, the ship was brought to an anchor within about three miles of that island. One of the boats was hoisted out ; and the lieutenant, accompanied by several of the ship's company, well armed, went on shore. Here they saw three of the natives, who suddenly rushed out of a wood upon them ; and, after discharging their arrows, ran off with great agility. Mr. Cook, judging that nothing was to be done at this place upon friendly terms, returned with his companions to the ship.

He now sailed westward, intending to proceed immediately to Batavia, on his return to Europe. To this he was induced by the leaky and otherwise bad state of the vessel, and by the consideration that no discovery of importance could be expected in seas which had already been often navigated, and where the different coasts



had been sufficiently described, both by Spanish and Dutch geographers. The only merit claimed by the lieutenant, in this part of his voyage, was his having established the facts of New Holland and New Guinea being two distinct islands.

On the ninth of October the voyagers arrived at Batavia, the capital, as it is well known, of a Dutch colony in the island of Java. As the ship could not safely proceed to Europe without a thorough repair, the lieutenant obtained permission to have this done at Batavia; and he had also a promise that he should be liberally supplied with whatever he might want for that purpose.

The gentlemen landed, taking Tupia and his boy Tayeto with them. Tupia had been long ill, and even when he left the ship he was exceedingly lifeless and dejected; but no sooner did he enter the town, than he appeared to be inspired with another soul. A scene so entirely new and extraordinary filled him with amazement. The houses, carriages, streets, people, and a multiplicity of other objects, rushing upon him at once, produced an effect similar to what is ascribed to enchantment. His boy, Tayeto, expressed his wonder and delight in a still more rapturous manner. He danced along the streets in a kind of ecstasy, examining every object with a restless and eager curiosity, which was excited and gratified every moment. Tupia's attention was particularly excited by the various dresses of the passing multitude; and when he was informed, that at Batavia every one wore the dress of his own country, he expressed a desire to appear in the garb of Otaheite. Accordingly, South Sea cloth being sent for from the ship, he equipped himself in it with great expedition and dexterity.

When the voyagers had been only nine days at Batavia, they began to feel the fatal effects of the climate and situation. Tupia, after his first flow of spirits had subsided, grew every day worse; and Tayeto was seized with an inflammation upon his lungs. Mr. Banks and



Dr. Solander were attacked by fevers, and, in a little time, almost every person, both on board and on shore, were sick. Tupia, being desirous of breathing a freer air than the stagnant atmosphere of Batavia, had a tent erected for him on a small adjacent island, to which he was accompanied by Mr. Banks. The surgeon of the ship, a sensible and skilful man, fell the first sacrifice to this fatal climate. Tayeto died on the ninth, and Tupia, who loved him with the tenderness of a parent, sunk immediately after the loss of the boy, and survived him only a few days. The disorders of Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander increased to such a height, that the physician declared they had no chance of preserving their lives but by removing into the country. Accordingly, a house was hired for them at the distance of about two miles from the town; and here, by slow degrees, they recovered. At length Mr. Cook was himself taken ill; and, of the whole ship's company, not more than ten were equal to the performance of their duty.

In the midst of these distresses, the lieutenant was diligently attentive to the repair of his vessel, the state of which was infinitely worse than had been expected. Indeed it was happy for the voyagers, that during a navigation for many hundred leagues, and through seas that were in the highest degree dangerous, they had been ignorant of their perilous situation. Had they known that the worms had penetrated quite through the sheathing, even into the timbers, and that a considerable part of the bottom of the vessel was worn thinner than the sole of a shoe, they must have been deeply affected, and the result of their voyage as to the discovery of numerous coasts and countries, would no doubt have been very different from what it proved.

Nearly three months were occupied in refitting the vessel, and completing her stock of water, provisions, and stores, erecting new pumps, and in various other necessary operations. On Christmas-day Lieutenant Cook, with Mr. Banks, and the rest of the gentlemen, went

on board; and two days afterward they stood out to sea.

As the Endeavour proceeded on her voyage to the Cape of Good Hope, the seeds of disease, which had been received at Batavia, appeared with the most threatening symptoms, and reduced the navigators to a very melancholy condition. The ship was, in fact, little better than an hospital, in which those who could go about were not sufficient for a due attendance upon those that were sick. Every possible means were adopted against the infection, but the malady had taken too deep root to be speedily eradicated. So fatal did it prove, that almost every night a dead body was committed to the sea. Mr. Green the astronomer, Mr. Parkinson the natural history painter; the boatswain, carpenter, sail-maker, and others, to the amount of twenty-three, were buried. These calamities made a powerful impression on the mind of Mr. Cook, and were, no doubt, the occasion of turning his thoughts towards those methods of preserving the health of seamen, which he afterwards practised with such extraordinary success.

On Friday, the fifteenth of March, the Endeavour reached the Cape of Good Hope. The sick were all immediately landed; and every possible care was taken towards the recovery of their health. The ship also underwent some further repairs; and received a supply of fresh provisions, wood, and water; and in about a month was again ready for sea. In the morning of the twenty-ninth of April, the voyagers crossed their first meridian, having then circumnavigated the globe. Two days afterwards they arrived at St. Helena, where they stayed three days. They then departed for England.

The rigging and sails of the ship were now become so bad, that something was continually giving way. Nevertheless our admirable commander, and his associates, pursued their course in safety. On the eleventh of June, 1771, they entered the British Channel. At six the next morning, they passed Beachy Head. In the afternoon of

the same day, the ship was brought to an anchor in the Downs, and Mr. Cook went on shore at Deal.

Thus ended Mr. Cook's first voyage round the world ; in which he had gone through many dangers, explored many countries, and exhibited the strongest proofs of an eminently sagacious and active mind ; a mind that was equal to every perilous enterprise, and to the boldest and most successful efforts of navigation and discovery.

*Louisa.*—How long, Edmund, was he absent from England ?

*Edmund.*—Almost three years : in the course of which he had made discoveries equal to those of all the navigators of his country from the time of Columbus to the period in which he lived.

*Frederic.*—These discoveries justly entitled him to the protection of the government, and the favour of his sovereign ; and he was, in consequence, shortly afterwards promoted to the rank of a commander in his majesty's navy. The president and council of the Royal Society were also highly gratified by the manner in which the transit of Venus had been observed.

*Mr. Allen.*—We are informed that the papers of Mr. Cook, and Mr. Green, relative to the transit of Venus, were put into the hands of Dr. Maskelyne, the astronomer royal, that he might deduce from them the important consequences to science which resulted from the observation ; and that this was done by him with all the accuracy and ability that could have been expected from his extensive knowledge, and well established character.

*Lady Irwin.*—It appears to me to have been a great loss to the public that the account of the voyage of Mr. Cook was not drawn up, either by himself or by some one of the gentlemen who had accompanied him.

*Louisa.*—I thought this had been the case ; may I ask by whom it was drawn up ?

*Sir Charles.*—By Dr. Hawkesworth, from the papers of Mr. Cook, his officers, and Mr. Banks ; and the work

thus published is said to have been more acceptable to the man of taste, from its style, and the general excellence of its composition, than useful to the geographer, the seaman, or the natural historian, from the facts which it contains.

*Mr. Allen.*—It was treated with peculiar severity by many of the writers of that day, in consequence of some opinions on the nature and designs of Providence, which Dr. Hawkesworth incautiously and very improperly advanced in it.

*Louisa.*—In the narrative which Edmund read last night, he spoke of the voyagers having imagined, when they first saw the island of New Zealand, that it was part of a continent in the southern hemisphere. There is no continent in that hemisphere marked on the globes or in maps.

*Sir Charles.*—True, my dear : but, for nearly two centuries before the time of Captain Cook, there was a prevailing idea that the unexplored part of the southern hemisphere contained another continent. Many plausible arguments had been urged, and many facts alleged, in support of this idea.

*Mr. Allen.*—Captain Cook, however, in the preceding voyage, had done away one of these arguments, by having ascertained that New Holland, which had been supposed part of such a continent, was in reality an island. Many ingenious and well-informed men, however, still adhered to the opinion that there existed a continent further south than those parts of the globe which had hitherto been explored. The British government, therefore, resolved to ascertain its existence by sending out ships for the express purpose of traversing every part of the Southern Ocean where it could possibly be supposed to lie.

The particulars of their outfit Frederic will relate.

*Frederic.*—Two vessels were purchased by the government. These, like the Endeavour, were of the kind that were used in the coal-trade ; and indeed, had been built by the same person who had built that ship. Much

attention was paid to the choice of them, and to their preparation for the service. The largest of them, which was of four hundred and sixty-two tons burthen, was named the *Resolution*; and the other, which was of three hundred and thirty-six tons burthen, was called the *Adventure*. In the month of November, 1771, Captain Cook was appointed to the command of the former; and about the same time Mr. Tobias Furneaux was promoted to the command of the latter. The *Resolution*, including men and officers, carried a hundred and twelve persons; and the *Adventure* eighty-one. They were fitted out in the most complete manner imaginable, and supplied with every extraordinary article which was suggested to be either necessary or useful. Lord Sandwich, who was at the head of the admiralty, and whose zeal on this occasion was indefatigable, visited the vessels from time to time, to be assured that the whole equipment was complete. Stores and provisions of the very best description were supplied, besides many articles that were considered important for preserving the health of the crews.

*Louisa*.—What gentlemen of science accompanied this expedition?

*Frederic*.—Mr. Wales, and Mr. Bayley, were appointed to make astronomical observations. Mr. John Reinhold Forster, and his son, were fixed upon to explore and collect the natural history of the countries which might be visited; and Mr. William Hodges, an excellent landscape painter, was employed to make drawings of such objects as could not so well be comprehended from written descriptions.

*Mr. Allen*.—When every thing was in readiness, Captain Cook received his instructions. With regard to these, without entering into a minute detail of them, it is sufficient to say, that he was sent out upon the most enlarged plan of discovery that is known in the history of navigation. He was instructed not only to circumnavigate the whole globe, but to circumnavigate it in high southern latitudes; making such traverses, from time to time, into

every corner of the Pacific Ocean not before examined, as might finally and effectually resolve the much agitated question about the existence of a continent in any part of the southern hemisphere, to which access could be had by the efforts of the boldest and most skilful navigators.

Here the conversation terminated. Frederic was prepared with a narrative of Captain Cook's second voyage round the world, but the reading of it was deferred until the ensuing evening.



## SEVENTEENTH EVENING.

At the request of Sir Charles Irwin, Frederic now read as follows :

### NARRATIVE OF CAPTAIN COOK'S SECOND VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

THE Resolution and Adventure sailed from Plymouth on the thirteenth of July, 1772. After having taken on board an additional supply of wine, provisions, stores, and other necessaries, at the islands of Madeira and St. Jago, and at the Cape of Good Hope, they proceeded immediately towards the high southern latitudes.

About the beginning of November, the vessels encountered a succession of stormy weather, which drove them somewhat eastward of the course that Captain Cook had intended to steer ; and by a sudden change of temperature, from hot to cold weather, the navigators had the misfortune to lose the principal part of the sheep, hogs, and geese, which they had on board.

On the tenth of December, in latitude fifty degrees forty minutes south, they began to meet with immense islands of ice. The weather was hazy, and the captain, on account of the ice islands, was now obliged to proceed



with the utmost caution. Four days after this the vessels were stopped by an immense field of low ice, to which no termination could be seen, either towards the east, west, or south. On the eighteenth they were completely embayed in ice, and found some difficulty in getting free from it. Though it was nearly midsummer in this part of the world, the weather was so severe that every possible care was requisite to prevent the men from perishing by cold.

Captain Cook finding the ice impenetrable towards the south, proceeded for some distance in a westerly direction, and afterwards east. A gale of wind arose, which brought with it so heavy a swell of the sea, as to render it dangerous for the vessels to remain among the ice. With some difficulty they were got clear, but not until they had received several hard knocks from the loose pieces. The weather was still hazy.

By Sunday, the seventeenth of January, Captain Cook had reached the latitude of sixty-seven degrees fifteen minutes south, when he could advance no further. At this time the ice was closed towards the south, in the whole extent from east nearly to west, without the least appearance of any opening. The captain, therefore, thought it no longer prudent at this time to persevere in sailing southward, especially as the summer was already half spent, and there was little reason to hope that it would be found practicable to get round the ice.

The voyagers consequently returned several degrees northward; and, on the first of February, they were in latitude forty-eight degrees thirty minutes south, and in longitude fifty-eight degrees seven minutes east, when they bore away in an easterly direction. On the eighth, no signals having been answered by the *Adventure*, the captain had reason to apprehend that a separation of that ship had taken place. After waiting two days, during which guns were kept discharging, and false fires were burnt in the night, the fact was confirmed; so that the *Resolution* was obliged to proceed alone in her voyage.

A few days after this the officers of the *Resolution* imagined they saw land toward the south-west ; but, on approaching the place, they found they had been deceived by clouds. In the night of the twenty-third, the weather being stormy, and much snow falling, the ship was found to be, on every side, involved in danger. It was consequently necessary again to retire somewhat northward ; and, in doing this, she encountered many large pieces of ice. The cold of this climate was found much more severe than that of the same latitudes in the northern hemisphere.

During his course hitherto, Captain Cook was convinced, from repeated proofs, in which, as an experienced navigator, he could not be deceived, that he had left no land behind him in the direction of west-south-west ; and that no land lay to the south on this side sixty degrees of latitude. He therefore came to a resolution, on the seventeenth of March, when in latitude fifty-nine degrees seven minutes south, and longitude one hundred and fifty-six degrees fifty-three minutes east, to quit these high latitudes, and proceed to New Zealand, with a view of looking out for the *Adventure*, and of refreshing his people. He consequently arrived off New Zealand on the twenty-fifth of March ; having been a hundred and seventeen days at sea, since he left the Cape of Good Hope, during which time he had sailed ten thousand nine hundred and eighty miles, without having once seen land.

After so long a voyage, it might have been expected that many of the crew would have been afflicted with the scurvy, a disease which is generally very fatal to seamen. This, however, was not the case ; for the captain had adopted such salutary modes of provisioning his men, and had been so attentive to airing and sweetening the ship, that only one person on board was much afflicted with that disease.

Captain Cook gave the name of Dusky Bay to the harbour he had entered. Finding an abundant supply

of wood, water, and provisions of different kinds, he continued here somewhat more than six weeks. During this time the vessel and rigging were repaired, and the whole adjacent coast was accurately examined. A variety of scientific observations also were made relative to the latitude and longitude of the place, the variation of the compass, and the diversity of the tides.

The navigators were visited by a few of the natives, who appeared to be more mild and docile than the generality of New-Zealanders whom they had hitherto seen. They were, however, of the same race, spoke the same language, and adhered nearly to the same customs. Their mode of life appeared to be a wandering one; and, though they were few in number, no traces were remarked of their families being connected in any close bonds of union or friendship.

When Captain Cook left Dusky Bay, he directed his course toward Queen Charlotte's Sound, where he expected to find the *Adventure*. He arrived in that sound somewhat after the middle of May, and had the satisfaction of discovering the *Adventure* there. The officers and crews of both ships were sincerely rejoiced at thus meeting again, after an absence of fourteen weeks.

Captain Cook determined now to continue his researches eastward, between the latitudes of forty-one and forty-six degrees south. He accordingly directed that both the ships should be prepared for the further prosecution of the voyage, as soon as possible. In the mean time he caused several small enclosures to be made near Queen Charlotte's Sound. These he stocked with the seeds of different kinds of useful vegetables, and with the roots of turnips, carrots, parsnips, and potatoes; all of which he considered might be of important use to the inhabitants of the adjacent country. An ewe and a ram, a male and female goat, a boar and two sows were also left, by which it was hoped the whole country would in a few years be stocked.

As some persons might consider it an extraordinary

step in our commander, to proceed in discoveries so far south as forty-six degrees of latitude, in the depth of winter, he has recorded his motives for so doing. Winter, he acknowledges, is by no means favourable for discoveries. Nevertheless, it appeared to him to be necessary that something should be done even in that season, in order to lessen the work in which he was engaged; and lest he should not be able to finish the examination of the southern part of the Pacific Ocean in the ensuing summer. Besides, if he should discover any land in his route to the east, he would be ready to begin to explore it, as soon as the season should be favourable. Such was the ardour of this eminent navigator for prosecuting the ends of his voyage, in circumstances which would have induced most men to have acted a more cautious part!

On the seventh of June, the *Resolution* and *Adventure* sailed from Queen Charlotte's Sound. They proceeded eastward for about two months, when the crew of the *Adventure* became so sickly that it was requisite, as speedily as possible, to look out for some place where they could obtain refreshment. Captain Cook, therefore, no longer entertaining any hopes of discovering a southern continent, at least during the present season, determined to proceed even northward of his former track. He passed four islands, near the seventeenth degree of south latitude, and the hundred and forty-second degree of west longitude. To these, he gave the names of *Resolution Island*, *Doubtful Island*, *Furneaux Island*, and *Adventure Island*. Early in the morning of the fifteenth of August, the ships came within sight of *Osnaburgh Island*, which had been discovered by Captain Wallis; and at six o'clock the same evening, the island of *Otaheite* was seen westward of the vessels. They approached it; but before the ships could be brought to a safe anchorage, in a bay called *Oaiti-piha* bay, they had a very narrow escape from being wrecked upon a reef of coral rocks.

They were soon crowded with the inhabitants of the country, who brought cocoa-nuts, plantains, bananas, apples, and several kinds of roots, which they exchanged for nails and beads. They promised to bring hogs and fowls; but nothing except water, fruit, and roots, could be obtained. To many who pretended to be chiefs, the captain made presents of shirts, axes, and other articles; but they and their friends were so intent on pilfering, that they were at last all turned out of the ships. A few hours afterwards, however, a reconciliation took place, and a friendly intercourse was reestablished.

Most of the people who now came on board knew Captain Cook again; and many of them anxiously asked for Mr. Banks, and for others who had accompanied the captain in his former voyage.

Since that voyage several important changes had taken place in the country. A battle had been fought between the people of the two kingdoms into which the island was divided; and many of the principal friends of the English had fallen in the contest. The celebrated Oberea, who had acted so conspicuous a part when Captain Wallis was at Otaheite, as well as when the present voyagers were last here, was now comparatively in a very humble station. She resided in the interior of the island, and was not only altered much for the worse in her person, but appeared to be poor, and not to possess any of her former consequence or authority.

On the twenty-fourth of August, the ships put to sea, and arrived the next evening at Matavai Bay. Before they could come to an anchor, the decks were crowded with the natives, many of whom Captain Cook knew, and by most of whom he was well remembered. Among a great multitude of people who were collected together upon the shore, was Otoo, the king of the island. Our commander paid him a visit on the following day at Oparree, the place of his residence; and found him to be a fine, personable, well-made man, six feet high, and about thirty years of age. The qualities of his mind,

however, did not correspond with those of his appearance ; for, in all his actions, he manifested an extraordinary degree of weakness and timidity.

No event of much importance occurred during the continuance of the ships on this occasion at Otaheite ; and as soon as the sick were recovered, and the necessary repairs of the vessels were finished, Captain Cook determined to put to sea again without delay. This he did, accordingly, in the evening of the first of September.

From Otaheite he directed his course for the island of Huaheine, which he reached the next day ; but, in passing into the harbour, the *Adventure* got ashore, and would have been wrecked, had not the most prompt and efficacious assistance been afforded. As soon as both the ships were in safety, Captain Cook, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, the commander of the *Adventure*, landed upon the island, where they were received by the natives with the utmost cordiality. A trade immediately commenced ; so that our navigators had a fair prospect of being plentifully supplied with fresh pork and fowls, which, to people in their situation, was a very desirable acquisition.

The captain was visited by his old friend Oree, the chief of the island, who expressed the most heartfelt delight at again seeing him. Oree brought with him a hog, and a considerable quantity of cloth, as a present : he promised that all the wants of the English should be supplied ; and he every day sent, for the officers' table, an abundance of ready-dressed fruit and roots. Some individuals of the island conducted themselves in a treacherous manner towards the English, but Oree caused them to be seized ; and several articles that had been stolen were recovered. He offered to give the men up to Captain Cook for punishment ; but the captain judiciously left them to the correction of their own chief, whom he amply rewarded for his fidelity.

At the island of Huaheine Captain Furneaux received



into his ship a young man named Omai, a native of Ulietea, of whom much has since been known and written. This choice Captain Cook at first disapproved, thinking that the youth was not a proper specimen of the inhabitants of the Society Islands; being inferior to many of them in birth and acquired rank, and not having any peculiar advantage in point of shape, figure, or complexion. The captain, however, afterwards found reason to be better satisfied with Omai's having accompanied the navigators to England.

During the short stay of the vessels at Huaheine, the English were very successful in obtaining supplies of provisions. No fewer than three hundred hogs, besides fowls and fruit, were procured; and had the ships continued longer at the place, the quantity might have been greatly increased.



From Huaheine, the navigators sailed for Ulietea, where a most friendly intercourse was renewed between Captain Cook and the chief of that island. But, during the short time that the vessels were there, an occurrence took place with the inhabitants respecting two

seamen belonging to the *Adventure*, who had continued on shore all night, contrary to orders, which, for a little while, interrupted the harmony that had prevailed; but it was soon restored.

Our navigators were as successful in procuring provisions at Ulietea as they had been at Huaheine. Captain Cook estimated that the number of hogs they obtained there amounted to four hundred or upwards in number. Indeed a greater number was offered than the ships could contain; so that our countrymen were enabled to proceed on their voyage thence, with no small degree of comfort and advantage.

Captain Cook, by his second visit to the Society Islands, acquired a further knowledge of their general state, and of the habits and customs of the inhabitants; and a much more correct knowledge of the geography of these islands than he had before possessed.

He sailed from Ulietea on the seventeenth of September, directing his course westward with an inclination to the south. Land was discovered on the twenty-third, to which he gave the name of Harvey's Island. On the first of October, he reached the island of Middleburg. Here, while he was looking out for a landing-place, two canoes, each of them conducted by two or three men, came boldly alongside the ship, and some of the people entered it without hesitation. This mark of confidence inspired the captain with so good an opinion of the inhabitants, that he determined, if possible, to pay them a visit. This he did the next day. Scarcely were the vessels anchored, before they were surrounded by a great number of canoes, full of the natives, who brought with them cloth, and various curiosities, which they exchanged for nails, and such other articles as were adapted to their fancy. Among those who came on board, was a chief named Tioony, whose friendship Captain Cook immediately gained by presents, consisting principally of a hatchet and some spikenails. A party of the navigators, with the captain at their head, having

embarked in two boats, proceeded to the shore, where they found an immense crowd of people, who welcomed them to the island with loud acclamations. There was not so much as a stick, or other weapon, in the hands of a single native, so pacific were their dispositions and intentions. They seemed to be more desirous of giving than receiving, and many of them, who could not approach near to the boats, threw into them, over the heads of others, whole bales of cloth, and then retired, without either asking or waiting for any thing in return. The whole day was spent by the navigators in the most agreeable manner. When they returned on board in the evening, every one expressed how much he was delighted with the country, and with the very obliging behaviour of the inhabitants, who seemed to vie with each other in their endeavours to give pleasure to the strangers. All this conduct appeared to be the result of the most pure good-nature, perhaps without being accompanied with much sentiment or feeling; for when Captain Cook signified to the chief his intention of quitting the island, he did not seem to be in the least affected. Among other articles presented by the captain to Tioony, he left him an assortment of garden-seeds, which if properly used, might be of great future benefit to the country.

From Middleburg the ships sailed to Amsterdam. Here bananas and cocoa-nuts were obtained in great abundance, together with several fowls and pigs; all of which the inhabitants gave in exchange for small nails and pieces of cloth. Even a few old rags were sufficient for the purchase of a pig or a fowl. Captain Cook was greatly surprised with the beauty and high state of cultivation which he observed here. He could have imagined himself transported into the most fertile plains of Europe. The scenery was every where pleasing; and nature, assisted by a little art, no where assumes a more splendid appearance than in this island.

Friendly as were the natives of Amsterdam, they

were not entirely free from the thievish disposition which had so often been remarked in the islanders of the Southern Ocean. The instances, however, of this kind, that occurred, were not of such a nature as to produce any extraordinary degree of trouble, or to involve our people in any quarrels with the inhabitants.

Captain Cook's introduction to the king of the island afforded a scene somewhat remarkable. His majesty was seated with so much sullen and stupid gravity, that the captain mistook him for an idiot, whom the Indians, from some superstitious reasons, were ready to worship. When the captain saluted and spoke to him, he neither answered, nor took the least notice of him ; nor did he alter a single feature of his countenance. Even the presents that were made to him could not induce him to resign his gravity, to speak one word, nor to turn his head either to the right hand or to the left. As he was in the prime of life, it is possible that a false sense of dignity might have engaged him to assume so solemn a stupidity of appearance.

The inhabitants of Amsterdam were somewhat copper-coloured, but were well-formed, and had regular features. They were an active, brisk, and lively race of people. The women, in particular, were the merriest beings the captain had ever seen. They frequently entertained the navigators with songs, and this in a manner by no means disagreeable ; all the while snapping their fingers by way of keeping time.

On the seventh of October, Captain Cook proceeded on his voyage ; intending to return directly to Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand, for the purpose of taking in wood and water, and then to pursue his discoveries in the south and east. It was the third of November before the Resolution arrived in this harbour. For many days previously she had been beaten about by tempestuous weather ; and during a tremendous storm, which lasted forty-eight hours, the Adventure was separated, and was not seen during the remainder of the voyage.

The first object of the Captain's attention, after his arrival in Queen Charlotte's Sound, was to provide for the repair of his ship, which had been injured, in various respects, by the storm. It was also requisite to examine into the state of the provisions, and particularly of the bread. He ordered all the casks to be opened, the bread to be picked, and such parcels of it to be re-baked in a copper-oven, which he had on board, as could by that means be recovered. Notwithstanding this care, four thousand two hundred and ninety-two pounds weight were found totally unfit for use.

Captain Cook made early inquiries concerning the animals that he had left at New Zealand in the former part of his voyage; and he had the mortification to ascertain that most of them had been destroyed. Thus had his benevolent endeavours to stock the country with useful animals been frustrated by the very people whom he was anxious to serve. The gardens had met with a better fate; and most of the articles that he had sown or planted in them were in a flourishing condition. Notwithstanding this inattention and folly of the New Zealanders, Captain Cook still continued his zeal for their benefit. He gave to some of the chiefs a boar, a young sow, two cocks, and two hens; and also directed three sows and one boar, together with two cocks and two hens, to be turned loose into the woods.

During the residence of the voyagers in Queen Charlotte's Sound, they were plentifully supplied both with vegetables and fish; and, by the attention which the commander had paid to his men in the article of provisions, there was not now one sick person on board his ship. On the twenty-sixth of November they sailed for New Zealand, in a south-easterly direction, still in search of a southern continent. A few days after this it was calculated that they were antipodes to their friends in London. They saw the first island of ice on the twelfth of December; and, in the progress of the voyage, in latitude sixty-seven degrees five minutes south, the ship



was surrounded with immense masses of ice, and also by so large a quantity of smaller loose pieces, that the navigation became extremely intricate and dangerous. Hence the commander found it necessary to direct his course northward, to clear them. On the twenty-fourth they could see nearly a hundred ice islands around them. Happily they had clear weather, and in consequence of the high southern latitude, they had also continual daylight. As soon as the state of the ice would permit, Captain Cook again proceeded southward, and on the thirtieth of January, 1774, having passed the antarctic circle, he reached the seventy-first degree of south latitude. To have proceeded further than this would have been the height of folly. It would have been exposing himself, his men, and his ship, to the utmost danger, and perhaps to destruction, without the least prospect of advantage. The captain was of opinion, as indeed were most of the gentlemen on board, that the ice now in sight extended quite to the pole, or might join to some land, to which it might have been fixed from the earliest time. If, however, there be such land, it can afford no better retreat for birds, or any other animals, than the ice itself, with which it must be wholly covered. Though our commander had not only the ambition of going farther than any one had done before, but of proceeding as far as it was possible for man to go, he was the less dissatisfied with the interruption he now met with, as it shortened the dangers and hardships inseparable from the navigation of the southern polar regions. In fact, he was impelled by inevitable necessity to stand back to the north.

The determination which Captain Cook now formed was to pass the ensuing winter within the tropic, if he met with no employment before he came there. He had a good ship, and a healthy crew, and was not in want either of stores or of provisions. In such circumstances, to have quitted the Southern Pacific Ocean would, he thought, have been betraying not only a want of perse-



verance, but of judgment, in supposing it to have been so well explored that nothing further could be done. He therefore laid out a plan of future extensive operations, which had the entire approbation of his officers.

Not long afterwards Captain Cook was attacked by a bilious cholic, the violence of which confined him for some time to his bed. When he began to recover, there was no fresh meat whatever on board the ship; and he could eat nothing else. In this difficulty a favourite dog, belonging to one of the gentlemen, was killed and served up at his table. Thus did he derive nourishment and strength from food, which to most people in Europe would have been in the highest degree disgusting. The necessity of the case overcame every feeling of dislike.

On the eleventh of March the navigators came within sight of Easter Island, which is situated about seventy-five degrees five minutes south latitude, and one hundred and nine degrees forty-six minutes west longitude. Their transactions here were of too little moment to deserve particular recital. It was remarked, however, that the inhabitants were excessively addicted to thieving; and the island itself had little which could recommend it to notice.

They next proceeded to the Marquesas Islands, and anchored in a bay of St. Christina, one of these. A traffic was commenced with the inhabitants, in the course of which there was the greatest possible difficulty to restrain their thievish propensities. The navigators, however, obtained here, among other things, a considerable supply of yams, plantains, and bread-fruit; a few cocoa-nuts, fowls, and some pigs. The chief reason for Captain Cook's touching at the Marquesas was to ascertain their situation, which had not before been correctly known.

It is remarkable, with respect to the inhabitants of these islands, that, collectively taken, they are without exception the finest race of people in this sea. Perhaps they surpass those of all other nations in symmetry of

form, and regularity of features. It is plain, however, from the affinity of their language to that of Otaheite and the Society Isles, that they are of the same origin.

From the Marquesas, Captain Cook once more steered his course for Otaheite; and reached his former place of anchorage, Matavai Bay, on the twenty-second of April. As he found here an abundance of provisions, he determined to continue some time, not only for the purpose of correcting, by astronomical observations, the errors of the ship's time-piece; but also to make such repairs of the ship as her late navigation of the icy seas of the south had rendered necessary.

During their residence here, on this occasion, the voyagers were entertained with various exhibitions. One of these was a grand naval review. The vessels of war consisted of a hundred and sixty large double canoes, well equipped, manned, and armed. They were decorated with flags and streamers; and the chiefs, together with all those who were on the fighting stages, were dressed in their war habits. The whole fleet made a noble appearance; such as our voyagers had never seen before. Besides the vessels of war, there were a hundred and seventy smaller double canoes, which seemed to be designed for transports and victuallers. Upon each of these was a small house; and they were each rigged with a mast and sail, which was not the case with the war canoes. Captain Cook conjectured that there were no fewer than seven thousand seven hundred and sixty men in the whole fleet. He was not able to obtain full information concerning the design of this armament.

The harmony which had subsisted between the voyagers and the inhabitants of Otaheite was, for a little while, interrupted by one of the latter having attempted to steal a water-cask. The man was caught in the fact; and the king of the island being unwilling to punish him, Captain Cook directed this to be done by his own people, on shore, by giving the man two dozen lashes with a cat-of-nine-tails. The king, however, seems afterwards

to have acknowledged the justice of the punishment, and peace was restored. With respect to this affair, it is certainly an extraordinary circumstance in the history of human society, that a stranger should thus have exercised jurisdiction over the natives of a country, in the presence of the prince of that country, without his authority, and even contrary to his solicitation.

The refreshments that were obtained at Otaheite during this visit were of great importance to the ship's company, for nearly all the bread they had left was decayed and scarcely eatable; and even of this, bad as it was, the quantity was so small that they were reduced to a very scanty allowance.

After leaving Otaheite, the voyagers proceeded again to Huaheine. Here the captain was immediately visited by his old friend Oree, and the same agreeable intercourse was renewed, which had formerly subsisted between them. During Captain Cook's stay at Huaheine, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other vegetable productions, were procured in abundance, but not a sufficiency of hogs to supply the daily consumption of the ship's company. This was partly owing to a want of proper articles for traffic. The captain was obliged, therefore, to set the smiths to work, to make different sorts of nails, iron tools, and instruments, to enable him to obtain refreshments at the islands he was yet to visit, and to support his credit and influence among the natives.

When the ship was ready to sail from Huaheine, Oree was the last man that went out of her. At parting, Captain Cook told him, that they should meet each other no more; he wept, and said, "Then let your sons come, we will treat them well."

At Ulietea, to which the captain next directed his course, the events that occurred were nearly similar to those that have already been related. He had always been received by the people of this island in the most hospitable manner, and they were justly entitled to every favour which it was in his power to grant. They ex-

pressed the deepest concern at his departure, and anxiously importuned him to return. Oree the chief, and his wife and daughter, but especially the two latter, scarcely ceased from weeping; and, at length, when he sailed, they were overwhelmed with grief.

On Captain Cook's first arrival at these islands he had some thoughts of visiting that of Bolabola. But, having already obtained a plentiful supply of refreshments, and the route he had in view allowing him no time to spare, he desisted from this project, and directed his course westward. After passing several other islands, he arrived, on the twentieth of June, at an island which appeared to have a numerous population. The captain with the other gentlemen went ashore; but the natives were found to be fierce and untractable. All endeavours to bring them to a parley were to no purpose. They approached with the ferocity of wild beasts, and instantly threw their darts. Two or three muskets discharged in the air did not prevent one of them from advancing still further, and throwing another dart, which passed close over Captain Cook's shoulder. The courage of this man had nearly cost him his life. When he threw his dart, he was not five paces from the captain, who had resolved to shoot him for his own preservation. It happened, however, that his musket missed fire; a circumstance on which he afterwards reflected with pleasure.

This island, from the disposition and behaviour of the inhabitants, with whom no intercourse could be established, and from whom no benefit could be received, was called by our commander Savage Island. It is about eleven leagues in circuit; is of a round form and good height: and has deep waters close to its shores. Among its other disadvantages, it is not furnished with a harbour.

In pursuing his course toward the west-south-west, Captain Cook passed a number of small islands, and, on the twenty-sixth, anchored on the north side of Anamooka, or Rotterdam. A traffic immediately com-

menced with the natives, who brought what provisions they had, being chiefly yams and shaddocks, which they exchanged for nails, beads, and other small articles. Here, as in many former cases, the captain was put to some trouble, on account of the thievish disposition of the people. This island, which is small and of triangular form, was first discovered by Tasman, a Dutch navigator, and was by him named Rotterdam. It is one of a numerous group to which Captain Cook gave the name of the Friendly Isles, in consequence of the firm alliance and friendship which seemed to subsist among the inhabitants, and of their kind and hospitable behaviour to strangers.

Pursuing their course westward, the navigators, on the sixteenth of July, discovered land, which they believed to be the same that M. de Bougauville, the French navigator, had named the Great Cyclades. After having explored the coast of this island for some days, they came to an anchor in a harbour of the island of Malli-collo. One of the first objects of the captain was to commence a friendly intercourse with the natives; but while he was thus employed, an accident occurred, which threw every thing into confusion. A fellow in a canoe, having been refused admittance into one of the boats, bent his bow to shoot a poisoned arrow at the people in the boat. The captain, seeing his intention, was compelled to fire at him a musket loaded with small shot. The man then attempted to shoot the captain, but the discharge of another musket made him drop his weapon. At this time some others of the inhabitants began to shoot arrows at the English; but no sooner was a four-pound ball fired over their heads, than they fled in the utmost confusion.

A few hours after these transactions, the English put off in two boats, and landed in the face of four or five hundred people, who were assembled on the shore; and who, though they were all armed with bows and arrows, clubs and spears, did not make the least resistance. On

the contrary, when they saw Captain Cook advance with only a green branch in his hand, one of them, who appeared to be a chief, giving his bows and arrows to another, met the captain in the water, bearing also a green branch. These being mutually exchanged in token of friendship, our commander was led to the crowd, to whom he immediately distributed presents. The marines, in the mean time, were drawn up on the beach. Captain Cook then acquainted the Indians, by signs, that he wanted wood; and in the same manner, permission was granted him to cut down the trees.



Much traffic could not be carried on with these people, because they set no value on nails or iron tools, nor indeed on any of the articles which our navigators could furnish. In such exchanges as they did make, and which were principally of arrows for pieces of cloth, they distinguished themselves by their honesty. When the ship had begun to sail from the island, and they might easily, in consequence of their canoes dropping astern, have avoided delivering the things they had been paid for, they used their utmost efforts to reach her, that they



might discharge their obligations. One man in particular followed the Resolution a considerable time, and did not reach her till the object which brought him was forgotten. As soon as he came alongside the vessel, he held up the article which had been purchased; and though several of the crew offered to buy it, he insisted upon delivering it to the person to whom it had been sold. That person not knowing him again, would have given something in return; but this he refused, and showed him what he had before received.

The inhabitants of this island were in general the most ugly and ill-proportioned people that the voyagers had seen. They were dark-coloured, somewhat diminutive in stature, and had long heads, flat faces, and countenances not much dissimilar to those of apes.

Proceeding hence in a south-westerly direction, the Resolution passed several small islands. To these Captain Cook gave names. Most of them appeared to be inhabited; and in one, called Tanna, there was a volcano which at intervals made a dreadful noise; and on each explosion, which happened every three or four minutes, threw up fire and smoke in prodigious columns. At one time great stones were seen high in the air.

The harbour in which the ship was anchored off the island of Tanna, was only a little creek about three quarters of a mile in length, but no place could exceed it in convenience for obtaining both wood and water.

Very little trade could be carried on with the people of Tanna. They had not the least knowledge of iron; and consequently nails, tools, and other articles made of that metal, which are so greedily sought for in the more eastern islands, were here of no consideration. Cloth also could be of no service to persons who go naked as these did. On the twentieth of August Captain Cook sailed from Tanna; and he employed all the remainder of the month in a further examination of the islands around him. After he had finished his survey of the whole Archipelago, and had gained a knowledge of it infinitely

superior to what he had attained before, he bestowed upon it the appellation of the New Hebrides.

The season of the year now rendered it necessary for him to return to the south, while he had yet time to explore any land he might meet with between the New Hebrides and New Zealand: at which place he again intended to touch, that he might refresh his people, and renew his stock of wood and water for another southern course. With this view he sailed on the first of September, and on the fourth land was discovered; in a harbour belonging to which the *Resolution* came to an anchor the next day. Captain Cook resolved to land, not only for the purpose of examining the country, but also of observing an eclipse of the sun, which was soon to happen. An intercourse immediately commenced with the inhabitants, who, during the whole of his stay, behaved in a peculiarly civil and friendly manner. In return he rendered them every service in his power. As he was unable to learn what the island was called by the natives, he gave to it the name of New Caledonia. Excepting New Zealand, this is perhaps the largest island in the South Pacific Ocean. The inhabitants were strong, robust, active, and well made; and in their dispositions were courteous and obliging. They did not appear in the least addicted to pilfering.

Every thing being ready for sea, Captain Cook weighed anchor on the thirteenth of September, with the intention of examining the coast of New Caledonia. In pursuing this object, by which he was enabled to add greatly to nautical and geographical knowledge, the *Resolution* was more than once in danger of being lost. After he had left the island, land was discovered, which, on a near approach, was found to be an island of considerable height, and five leagues in circuit. Captain Cook named it Norfolk Isle, in honour of the noble family of Howard. It was uninhabited; various trees and plants were observed in it that are not common at New Zealand; and in particular the flax plant, which is rather more luxuriant

here than in any part of that country. The chief produce of this island, however, is a kind of spruce pine, very thick, and tall and straight, which grows in great abundance.

From Norfolk Isle, our commander steered for New Zealand, in Queen Charlotte's Sound, where he shortly afterwards arrived. On examining the gardens that had been made in one of the preceding visits, they were found to be almost in a state of nature, having been wholly neglected by the inhabitants. Many of the articles, however, were in a flourishing condition, owing to the excellence of the soil in which they had been planted.

Several days elapsed before any of the natives made their appearance; but when they did so, and recognised Captain Cook and his friends, joy succeeded to fear. They hurried in numbers out of the woods, and embraced the English over and over again, leaping and skipping about like madmen. The whole intercourse with the New Zealanders, during this third visit, was peaceable and friendly.

On the tenth of November, Captain Cook departed from New Zealand, in further pursuit of his great object, the determination of the question concerning the existence of a southern continent. Having sailed, till the twenty-seventh, in different degrees of latitude, extending from forty-three to fifty-five degrees south, he at length gave up all hope of finding any more land in this ocean. He came, therefore, to the resolution of steering directly for the western entrance of the Straits of Magellan, with a view of coasting the south side of Terra del Fuego, round Cape Horn, to the Strait Le Maire.

In the prosecution of his voyage, our commander, on the seventeenth of December, reached the west coast of Terra del Fuego; and having continued to range it till the twentieth, he came to an anchor in a place to which he afterwards gave the name of Christmas Sound. Through the whole course of his various navigations, he had never seen so desolate a coast. It seems to be

entirely composed of rocky mountains, without the least appearance of vegetation. These mountains terminate in horrible precipices, the craggy summits of which spire up to a vast height; so that scarcely any thing in nature can appear with a more savage aspect than the whole of the country.

But barren and dreary as the land was, it was not wholly destitute of accommodations; for near every harbour of it the navigators found fresh water and wood for fuel. The country abounded likewise with wild fowl, and particularly with geese; which afforded a refreshment to the whole ship's crew, that was the more acceptable on account of the approaching festival. Had they not thus been happily provided for, their Christmas cheer must have been salt beef and pork. Some Madeira wine, the only article of provision that was mended by keeping, was still left. This, in conjunction with the geese, which were cooked in every variety of method, enabled the navigators to celebrate Christmas as cheerfully as perhaps was done by their friends in England.

Our commander soon afterwards proceeded through the Strait of Le Maire to Staten Island. In ranging round the latter a harbour was found, the discovery of which, it was considered, might be of great service to future navigators. On the fourth of January, 1775, he sailed in an easterly direction; and about ten days afterward land was seen. This was at first imagined to have been part of a great continent. The captain, however, coasted it, and found it an island about seventy leagues in circuit. In honour of his late majesty, he named it the Isle of Georgia, and it was a remarkable circumstance, that neither a river, nor any stream of fresh water, was found on the whole shore of this island.

Proceeding on a south-easterly course, another group of islands was discovered on the thirty-first, to one of which the commander gave the appellation of the Southern

Thule, from its having been the most southern land that had hitherto been discovered. It was everywhere covered with snow, and displayed a surface of vast height.

About the end of February he crossed the line of the route he had taken when he left the Cape of Good Hope ; having now made the circuit of the southern ocean in a high latitude, and traversed it in such a manner as to leave no room for the possibility of there being any continent in that part of the hemisphere, unless near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation. By twice visiting the tropical sea, he had not only ascertained the situation of some old discoveries, but had made many new ones ; and, indeed, even in that part, had left little more to be accomplished. The intention of the voyage had in every respect been answered, and the southern hemisphere sufficiently explored. A complete termination was hereby put to the searching after a southern continent.

The great purpose of the navigation of Captain Cook round the globe being thus completed, he at length directed his views towards England. His ship was not in a condition to struggle with many further difficulties. Her sails and rigging were so much worn, that some part of them was giving way every hour ; and there was nothing left wherewith either to repair or replace them. The provisions were in such a state of decay that they afforded little nourishment, and the ship's company had been long without refreshments. Throughout the whole voyage, these men had by their behaviour, merited every indulgence which it was in the power of their commander to bestow. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they had shown that no difficulties or dangers which came in their way were incapable of being surmounted.

From all these considerations, Captain Cook was determined to steer for the Cape of Good Hope ; and on Wednesday, the twenty-second of March, according to his reckoning (who had sailed round the world), but on

Tuesday, the twenty-first at the Cape, he anchored his ship in Table Bay. During the circumnavigation of the globe, from the period of our commander's leaving the Cape of Good Hope to his return to it again, he had sailed no less a distance than twenty thousand leagues. This was an extent of voyage nearly equal to three times the equatorial circumference of the earth, and such as had never been accomplished before by any ship in the same compass of duration.

On the remainder of the voyage it is not necessary to enlarge. Though it was conducted with the same attention to navigation and geography, and with the same sagacity in marking whatever was worthy of observation, nevertheless, as it was not employed in traversing unknown seas, or in discovering countries that had not been heard of before, it may be sufficient briefly to mention the places at which Captain Cook touched, before his arrival in England. The repairs of the ship having been completed, and the necessary stores carried on board, together with a fresh supply of provisions and water, he left the Cape of Good Hope on the twenty-seventh of April, and reached the island of St Helena on the fifteenth of May. Here he staid till the twenty-first, when he sailed for the island of Ascension, where he anchored on the twenty-eighth. From this place he directed his course for the island of Fernando de Noronha, near the coast of South America, at which he arrived on the ninth of June. He proceeded thence to the Azores; and on the thirtieth of July, arrived in safety at Portsmouth, having been absent from England three years and eighteen days; in which time, and under all changes of climate, he had lost but four men, and only one of these by sickness.



## EIGHTEENTH EVENING.

*Lady Irwin.*—The second voyage of Captain Cook is not so full of curious and interesting incidents as the first ; but this, I think, may easily be accounted for.

*Frederic.*—The greater part of his time was passed at sea, and in latitudes far distant from any human habitation. Consequently there was little opportunity for that variety of adventure, which, from his long residence at the different islands in the Pacific Ocean, had rendered his previous voyage so peculiarly amusing.

*Sir Charles.*—Notwithstanding this the second voyage is a very important one. It had been conducted in a most able manner ; and had completely determined the grand point that he had been sent to ascertain. The existence of a southern continent was now banished from the belief of every person capable of forming an opinion upon the subject.

*Mr. Allen.*—In another point of view it was highly useful. Before this voyage, navigators, and even Captain Cook himself, had been very ill-informed respecting the most effectual mode of preserving the lives of seamen. Towards this object our commander directed his most anxious and unremitted attention ; and that he succeeded in preserving the health of his men is sufficiently proved by the fact which Frederic yesterday related, that notwithstanding he was more than three years at sea, he lost by sickness only one man out of a hundred and eighteen.

*Frederic.*—All these circumstances tended to recommend him so justly and so powerfully to the favour and protection of the government, that, soon after his return, he was promoted to the rank of post-captain ; and also appointed a captain at Greenwich Hospital. The latter situation was intended to afford him an honourable reward for his labours and services.

*Edmund.*—Among the honorary distinctions that he received, the Royal Society elected him a fellow of their body. They also voted to him Sir Godfrey Copley's gold medal, as a reward for the account which he transmitted to them of the methods he had taken to preserve the health of his crew. This was a medal annually voted to the person who transmitted to the society the best experimental paper; and no determination could have been founded in greater wisdom or justice than their voting it on this occasion to Captain Cook.

*Frederic.*—But it is a painful subject of reflection, that this honourable testimony to the merit of the gallant commander was awarded to him after his departure on his third voyage, and never came to his knowledge.

*Mr. Allen.*—Yet, previously to his departure there can be no doubt but he was fully apprized of the mark of distinction which was thus intended for him: the medal itself was delivered into the hands of Mrs. Cook.

*Louisa.*—The account which was published of Captain Cook's first voyage was drawn up by Dr. Hawkesworth. May I ask who was the writer of the second?

*Sir Charles.*—In consequence of the objections that had been made to Dr. Hawkesworth's production, Captain Cook himself resolved to undertake the writing of the second voyage; and the manner in which it is written is highly creditable to him. The style, like that of his own character, is so simple, clear, and manly, that a pen of more studied elegance would not probably have given to the narration any additional advantage. The publication of this voyage, which did not take place till some time after Captain Cook had left England on his third voyage, was superintended by his learned and valuable friend, the Reverend Dr. Douglas, afterwards bishop of Salisbury.

*Mr. Allen.*—As the controversy respecting the existence of a southern continent had now been set at rest, there remained only one disputed point of nautical

geography of any magnitude or importance to be settled.

*Lady Irwin.*—You allude, I presume, to the existence of a north-west passage, or of a supposed communication between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, by a high northern latitude.

*Mr. Allen.*—I do so. That such a passage did exist was the opinion of many eminent geographers ; and the British government now resolved to explore, with the utmost possible accuracy, the coasts of North America, determining to ascertain, if possible, whether such a passage did or did not exist. For the conduct of an enterprise, the operations of which were intended to be extremely various and extensive, great ability, skill, and experience were requisite. That Captain Cook was of all men the best qualified for carrying into execution the principal part of this design, was a matter that could not be called in question. But, however ardently it might be wished that he would take upon him the command of the service, no one presumed to solicit him upon the subject. The benefits he had already conferred on science and navigation, and the labours and the dangers he had already experienced were so many and so great, that it was not deemed reasonable to ask him to engage in fresh perils. It was, however, only necessary to mention in his presence the importance of the scheme ; he immediately entered into it with the utmost zeal, and voluntarily offered to undertake the execution of it.

*Sir Charles.*—All former navigators round the globe had returned to Europe by the Cape of Good Hope ; but to Captain Cook was now assigned the task of attempting a return by the high northern latitudes, betwixt Asia and America. The usual plan of discovery was, therefore, in the present instance reversed.

*Louisa.*—This must have been an extremely arduous undertaking. The sufferings that had already been experienced by Captain James and others, also showed that it would be attended with great danger.

*Edmund.*—Captain Cook was perfectly aware of these ; but he was not to be deterred from giving his utmost aid to the furtherance of so important a project by any fear either of difficulties or danger. The *Resolution*, and another vessel called the *Discovery*, were immediately prepared for the voyage, and were equipped in every respect in the most complete manner imaginable. The command of the former was given to Captain Cook, and of the latter to Captain Clerke. To the *Resolution* was assigned the same complement of officers and men which she had carried out in the preceding voyage ; and there was very little difference in the establishment of the *Discovery* from that of the *Adventure*.

*Sir Charles.*—We must not omit to state, that, at the express command of his majesty, an assortment of useful animals was carried out, with the benevolent design of conveying them to the inhabitants of Otaheite, and of other islands in the Pacific Ocean. These were, principally, a bull, two cows, with their calves, and several sheep. For the same excellent purpose the captain was furnished with a sufficient quantity of such European garden seeds as could not fail of being a valuable present to the newly discovered islands, by adding fresh supplies of food to their own vegetable productions. By order of the Board of Admiralty, many other articles were delivered to our commander, which were calculated, in various ways, to improve the condition of the natives of the other hemisphere.

*Frederic.*—As the ships were to touch at the Society Islands, it had been determined not to omit the only opportunity which might ever occur of conveying Omai back to his native country. Accordingly, he left London on the twenty-fourth of June, in company with Captain Cook ; and it was with a mixture of regret and satisfaction that he took his departure. The good treatment that he had received in England had made a deep impression upon his mind ; and he entertained the highest sentiments of respect both for the country and the

people. Nevertheless, the pleasing prospect he now had before him of returning home, loaded with what, he well knew, would be there esteemed invaluable treasures, and the flattering hope which the possession of these afforded him of attaining a distinguished superiority among his countrymen, were considerations which operated, by degrees, to suppress every uneasy sensation.

The abstract that I have prepared of this voyage is, I fear, too long to admit of my reading the whole this evening. I shall, therefore, request permission to read about half of it now, and to defer the remainder till tomorrow.

He proceeded as follows :—

#### NARRATIVE OF CAPTAIN COOK'S THIRD VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

ALTHOUGH the Resolution and the Discovery were destined for the same service, they did not leave England at the same time. Captain Cook, in the former, sailed from Plymouth on the twelfth of July; and Captain Clerke, in the latter, on the first of August, 1776. The two ships joined at the Cape of Good Hope, about the beginning of November. Here Captain Cook made an addition to his stock of animals by the purchase of cattle, horses, sheep, goats, rabbits, and poultry. All these, as well as most of the animals then on board the vessels, were intended for Otaheite, New Zealand, and other islands.

The ships sailed from the Cape about the beginning of December; and the navigators, pursuing their course towards the south-east, the weather soon became so cold that several of the goats and some of the sheep died.

On the twelfth of December, two islands were seen, the larger of which appeared to be about fifteen leagues in circuit. The ships passed through the channel be-

tween them ; and so extremely barren was their surface, that neither tree nor shrub of any kind could be distinguished on either of them, even by the assistance of the best glasses. They seemed to have a cold and rocky shore, and to be composed, for the most part, of barren mountains, the summits and sides of which were covered with snow. As no names had hitherto been assigned to these islands, our commander called them Prince Edward's Islands, in honour of his majesty's fourth son, the late Duke of Kent.

Though it was now the middle of summer in this hemisphere, the weather was not less severe than what is generally experienced in England in the very depth of winter. Instead, however, of being discouraged by this circumstance, the captain directed his course still further south, till he got into the latitude of land that had been discovered a few years before by M. de Kerguelen, a French navigator. It was part of our commander's instructions to examine whether a good harbour might not here be found. He reached the island called Kerguelen's Land on the twenty-fourth, and the next day landed upon it. The shore was almost entirely covered with penguins and other birds, and with seals. Fresh water was so plentiful, that every gully afforded a large stream ; but not a single tree nor shrub, nor the least sign of such, could be met with, and but little herbage of any sort. Before Captain Cook returned to his ship, he ascended a ridge of rocks, that rise in a kind of amphitheatre, above one another, hoping thence to obtain a view of the country. In this, however, he was disappointed ; for, previously to his reaching the top, there came on so thick a fog, that he could scarcely find his way down again.

The weather was foggy during the whole time that the ships continued here ; notwithstanding this circumstance, and that the navigation of the whole coast was extremely dangerous, Captain Cook, according to his instructions, examined every part of it with the



greatest accuracy. The island was so excessively barren, that perhaps no place, hitherto discovered, under the same parallel of latitude, affords so scanty a field for a natural historian as this. The whole number of plants that were remarked by the voyagers did not exceed sixteen or eighteen, and even those included several kinds of moss. If our commander had not been unwilling to deprive M. de Kerguelen of the honour of this island bearing his name, he would have called it the Island of Desolation.

Captain Cook next directed his course towards New Zealand, that he might obtain a further supply of water, take in wood, and make hay for his cattle. The number of these was now considerably diminished; for two bulls, one of the heifers, two rams, and several of the goats, had died while the ships were employed in exploring Kerguelen's Land.

Nothing very remarkable occurred to the voyagers till the twenty-fourth of January, 1777, when they discovered the coast of Van Dieman's Land. Two days afterwards the ships were anchored, and Captain Cook ordered the boats to be hoisted out; in one of which he went himself, to look out for the most commodious place for obtaining the necessary supplies.

One day, while the English were employed in cutting wood, they were agreeably surprised by a visit from some of the natives. The party consisted of eight men and a boy, who approached, not only without fear, but with the most perfect confidence and freedom imaginable. There was only a single person among them that had any thing that even appeared like a weapon, and that was only a stick about two feet long, and pointed at one end. They were quite naked, and wore no kind of ornaments; unless some large punctures, or ridges, raised in different parts of their bodies might be considered such. Most of them had their hair and beards smeared with a red ointment; and the faces of some of them were painted with the same composition. Every present which Captain

Cook made them they received without the least appearance of satisfaction. After this about twenty of the inhabitants, men and boys, joined Captain Cook and such of his people as had landed with him. To each of these he gave a string of beads and a medal, which they seemed to receive with some satisfaction. On iron, and on iron tools, they appeared to set no value. There was reason to believe that they were even ignorant of the use of fish-hooks ; nor was any kind of canoe or vessel discovered by which they could go upon the water. What the ancient poets tell us of fauns and satyrs living in hollow trees, is realized at Van Dieman's land. Some wretched constructions of sticks covered with bark, and which did not deserve the name of huts, were indeed found near the shore ; but these seemed only to have been erected for temporary purposes. The most comfortable habitations of the natives were afforded by the largest trees. These had their trunks hollowed out by fire, to the height of six or seven feet ; and there was room enough in them for three or four persons to sit round a hearth, made of clay. During the few days that Captain Cook continued here, he neglected nothing that could promote the knowledge of science or navigation.

He sailed from Van Dieman's land on the thirtieth of January, 1777, and about a fortnight afterwards came to an anchor at his old station of Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand. Being unwilling to lose any time, he commenced his operations that very afternoon. Several of the empty casks were immediately landed, and a place was begun to be cleared for setting up the two observatories, and the erection of tents to accommodate a guard, and the rest of the company, whose business might require them to remain on shore. Our navigators had not long been at anchor, before a number of canoes filled with natives came alongside of the ships. Very few of these, however, would venture on board. This appeared the more extraordinary, as the captain was

well known to them all, and they could not be insensible how liberally he had behaved to them on former occasions.

There was a real cause for this shyness on the part of the New Zealanders. A dreadful event had happened to some of the crew belonging to Captain Furneaux, while he lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound, after he had finally separated from Captain Cook, in the former voyage. Ten men, who had been sent out in the large cutter to gather wild greens for the ship's company, had been killed in a skirmish with the natives. What was the cause of the quarrel could not be ascertained, as not one of the company survived to relate the story. It was the remembrance of this event, and the dread of its being revenged, which now rendered the New Zealanders fearful of entering the English vessels. The captain therefore judged it necessary to use every endeavour to assure them of the continuance of his friendship, and that he would not disturb them on account of that catastrophe. In consequence of this assurance, they soon became again familiar.

In the meanwhile the operations for refitting the ships, and for obtaining provisions, were carried on with great vigour. So healthy were the crews, that at this time there were only two invalids upon the sick lists of both ships.

While the commander was making an excursion for the purpose of collecting food for his cattle, he embraced the opportunity to inquire, as accurately as possible, into the circumstances which had attended the melancholy fate of his countrymen. Omai was his interpreter on this occasion. The result of the inquiry was, that the quarrel first took its rise from some thefts, in the commission of which the natives were detected; that there was no premeditated plan of bloodshed; and that if these thefts had not, unfortunately, been too hastily resented, no mischief would have happened.

Captain Cook, in this his last visit to New Zealand, gave to one chief two goats, a male and female, with a

kid ; and to another two pigs, a boar and a sow. It had been his intention to have left other animals than these ; but he was unable to find a chief who was powerful enough to protect them, and he therefore gave up all thought of it.

A great addition of knowledge was obtained, during this voyage, with respect to the productions of New Zealand, and the manners and customs of its inhabitants ; but these it would occupy too much time at present to describe. On the twenty-fourth of February Captain Cook proceeded on his voyage, in a north-easterly direction ; and about five weeks afterward, arrived at an island situated in about twenty degrees of south latitude, and called by the natives Wateoo. This island, which is about six leagues in circuit, is a very beautiful spot, having a surface composed of hills and plains, covered with a verdure rendered extremely pleasant by the diversity of its hues. Its inhabitants were very numerous, and many of them were elegantly formed. The Resolution had no sooner approached the shore, than some of them put off in their canoes, and three were persuaded to go on board. Their whole behaviour whilst there showed that they were perfectly at ease, and that they felt no apprehension either that they should be detained or ill used. Several others of the inhabitants afterwards went on board.

Three of the gentlemen, accompanied by Omai, went on shore ; and the latter was astonished to find among the crowd there assembled, three of his own countrymen, natives of the Society Islands. The distance betwixt these islands and that of Wateoo is near six hundred miles : the history of the passage of these Indians is consequently an extraordinary one. Twelve years before, about twenty persons of both sexes had embarked on board a canoe at Otaheite, to cross over to the neighbouring island of Ulietea. A violent storm arose, which drove them out of their course ; and their provisions being very scanty, they suffered incredible hardships, and

the greatest part of them perished by famine and fatigue. Four men only survived, when the boat overset, and then the destruction of this small remnant appeared to be inevitable. However, they kept hanging by the side of the vessel. This they continued to do for some days, until they were floated within sight of the people of this island, who immediately sent out canoes, and conveyed them on shore. The three men who now survived expressed a strong sense of gratitude for the kind treatment they had received ; and so well satisfied were they with their present situation, that they refused an offer which was made them of being conveyed back to their native country.

It has been stated that it was a principal object of this voyage to examine the Pacific Ocean in the high northern latitudes ; but hitherto the progress of the vessels had been so unavoidably retarded by unfavourable winds, and other adverse circumstances, that it was become impossible for the commander this year to think of proceeding towards those latitudes. The rainy season soon afterwards commenced ; and the united heat and moisture of the weather, in addition to the impossibility of keeping the ships dry, threatened to be very injurious to the health of his people. So great and so judicious, however, were the attentions which he paid to their health, that there was not as yet one sick man on board either ship. On the first of May, the vessels arrived at Anamooka. A friendly intercourse was immediately opened with the natives. The commander received the greatest possible civilities from Toobou, the chief of Anamooka ; as well as from the chiefs of Tongataboo, and other adjacent islands. The only interruption to the friendship which had been established, arose from the thievish disposition of the inhabitants of Anamooka. Numerous opportunities were here afforded of remarking how expert these people were in the business of stealing. Even some of the chiefs did not think the profession unbecoming their dignity. One of them was

detected in carrying a bolt out of the ship, concealed under his clothes. For this offence Captain Cook sentenced him to receive a dozen lashes, and kept him confined till he had paid a hog for his liberty; and afterwards the navigators were no longer troubled with thieves of rank. Their servants, or slaves, however, were still employed; and upon them a flogging seemed to make no greater impression than it would have done upon the mainmast. At length, Captain Clerke invented a mode of treatment, which was thought to be productive of good effect. He put the thieves into the hands of the barber, and completely shaved their heads. In consequence of this operation, they became objects of ridicule to their own countrymen; and our people, by immediately knowing them, and keeping them at a distance, were enabled to deprive them of future opportunities for a repetition of their rogueries.

The island of Anamooka being exhausted of its articles of food, Captain Cook proposed on the eleventh to proceed directly for Tongataboo. From this resolution, however, he was diverted by one of the chiefs, who warmly recommended, in preference to it, an island, or rather a group of islands, called Hapae, lying in a north-westerly direction. He accordingly proceeded thither, and was received in the most friendly manner imaginable by the inhabitants. During the whole stay of the navigators at Hapae, their time was spent in a reciprocation of presents, civilities, and solemnities. On the part of the natives were displayed single combats with clubs, wrestling and boxing matches, female combatants, dances performed by men, and night entertainments of singing and dancing. The English, on the other hand, gave pleasure to the Indians by exercising the marines, and excited their astonishment by the exhibition of fire works. After curiosity had, on both sides, been sufficiently gratified, Captain Cook applied himself to an examination of that and other neighbouring islands. He then returned to Anamooka; and on the passage had



another narrow escape from shipwreck, upon a low sandy isle, surrounded by breakers.

While Captain Cook was at Hapae, he was introduced to Poulaho, the king of the Friendly Isles, who invited him to pass over to Tongataboo. This request he complied with; and on the tenth of June he arrived at Tongataboo, where the king was waiting on the beach to receive him. He was immediately conducted to a small but neat house, which he was told was to be his residence during his stay in the island. The house was situated a little within the skirts of the woods, and had a fine large area before it; so that a more agreeable spot could not have been provided. Our commander's arrival at Tongataboo was followed by a succession of entertainments, similar to those which had occurred at Hapae, though somewhat diversified in circumstances, and exhibited with additional splendour. The pleasure, however, of the visit was occasionally interrupted by the thieveries of many of the inhabitants. Nothing could prevent them from plundering our voyagers in every quarter; and they did it in the most daring and insolent manner imaginable.

Captain Cook left on this island several animals of different kinds; and explained to the chiefs, as far as he was capable of doing it, the manner in which they ought to be preserved and treated.

His continuance amongst the Friendly Islands was in the whole between two or three months; during which time (some accidental disputes excepted) the utmost cordiality prevailed betwixt the inhabitants and the English. Besides the immediate benefits that were derived by the ships from the friendly intercourse which had been established, so extensive an addition was now made to the geographical knowledge of this part of the Pacific Ocean, as may render no small service to future navigators. From the information which our commander received, this Archipelago is very extensive. More than one hundred and fifty islands were reckoned by the

natives; who made use of bits of leaves of different size for designating their number, and their relative dimensions.

On the seventeenth of July, our commander took his final leave of the Friendly Islands; and in about three weeks he reached Otaheite. Omai's first reception among his countrymen was not entirely of a flattering nature. Though several persons came on board who knew him, and one of them was his brother-in-law, there was nothing remarkably tender or affectionate in their meeting. An interview which Omai had with his sister was, however, marked with expressions of the tenderest affection; and in a visit, likewise, which he received from an aunt, the old lady threw herself at his feet, and plentifully bedewed them with tears of joy.

Captain Cook found that since he was last at Otaheite, in 1774, two Spanish vessels had been there, and had left some hogs, dogs, goats, one bull, and a ram. The officers and crews of these vessels had behaved so well, that the inhabitants spoke of them in the strongest expressions of esteem and veneration.

The captain was visited by Otoo, the king of the island, and their former friendship was renewed; a friendship which was continued without interruption, and cemented by a perpetual succession of civilities, good offices, and entertainments. One of our commander's first objects was to dispose of all the European animals which were in the ships. Accordingly, he conveyed to Oparre, Otoo's place of residence, a peacock and hen; a turkey cock and hen; a gander and three geese; a drake and four ducks. There were already, at Otoo's, several goats, and the Spanish bull. To these Captain Cook sent the three cows that he had on board, together with a bull of his own; to all which were added such of the sheep as still remained in the vessels.

On the present visit, the navigators had undeniable proof that the offering of human sacrifices formed a part of the religious institutions of Otaheite. Indeed they

were themselves witness to a solemnity of this kind; the process of which our commander has particularly described, and has related with the just sentiments of indignation and abhorrence. He says there is reason to fear that this horrid custom prevailed throughout the various islands of the Pacific Ocean: he had particular evidence of the existence of it in the Friendly Islands.

One day while the navigators were in Matavai Bay, Captain Cook and Captain Clerke mounted on horseback, and rode into the country. The Otaheitans, who had never seen such animals before, were utterly astonished; and gazed upon the gentlemen with as much amazement as if they had been centaurs. Not all the novelties put together which European visitors had carried amongst them, inspired them with so high an opinion of the greatness of distant nations as this.

The manner in which Captain Cook was freed from a rheumatic complaint, that consisted of a pain extending from the hip to the foot, deserves to be recorded. Otoo's mother, his three sisters, and eight other women, went on board, for the express purpose of undertaking the cure of his disorder. The captain accepted of their friendly offer, had a bed spread for them on the cabin floor, and submitted himself to their directions. Being desired to lay himself down amongst them, as many of them as could get round him began to squeeze him with both hands, from head to foot, but more particularly in the part where the pain was lodged, till they made his bones crack, and his flesh became a perfect mummy. After undergoing this discipline about a quarter of an hour, he was glad to be released from the women. The operation, however, gave him immediate relief; so that he was encouraged to submit to another rubbing-down before he went to bed; the consequence of which was, that he was tolerably easy all the succeeding night. His female physicians repeated their prescription the next morning, and again in the evening; after which

his pains were entirely removed, and the cure was perfected.

During this visit to Otaheite, so cordial a friendship and confidence were established betwixt the voyagers and the natives, that it was not once interrupted by any unpleasant incident. From Otaheite Captain Cook sailed on the thirteenth to the adjacent island of Eimeo. At this island the transactions were, for the most part, unpleasant. Two of the goats, stolen at different times, were the cause of the commander adopting an hostile conduct against the inhabitants. On the eleventh of October the ships arrived in a harbour on the west side of the island of Huaheine.

The grand business of Captain Cook at Huaheine was to settle Omai there, on the very spot from which he had been taken. After a variety of ceremonies had been performed, possession of a piece of ground near the shore was given to him; and a small house was built for him by the ships' carpenters, in which he might secure such European commodities as he possessed. At the same time a garden was made for his use, in which were planted shaddocks, vines, pine apples, melons, and the seeds of different useful vegetables. All these Captain Cook had the satisfaction of seeing in a flourishing state before he left the island. When the house was nearly finished, and many of the movables were carried ashore, a box of toys excited the admiration of the multitude in a much higher degree than articles of a more useful nature. With regard to the pots, kettles, dishes, plates, drinking-mugs, glasses, and the whole of domestic accommodations, which in our estimation are so necessary and important, scarcely any one of the countrymen of Omai would condescend to look upon them. Omai himself, being sensible that these pieces of English furniture would be of no great consequence in his present situation, wisely sold several of them among the people of the ships, for hatchets and other iron tools, which had here a more intrinsic value.

The European weapons that were given to him consisted of a musket, bayonet, and cartouche-box : a fowling-piece, two pair of pistols, and two or three swords or cutlasses. With the possession of these warlike implements he was highly delighted ; and it was only to gratify his eager desire for them, that Captain Cook was induced to make him such presents. The captain would otherwise have thought it happier for him to be without fire-arms, lest an imprudent use of them should rather increase his dangers than establish his superiority.

On the second of November, 1777, Omai took his final leave of the English in a very affectionate manner, but at the same time with manly resolution ; and the vessels sailed for Ulietea, where they arrived on the following day. As the navigators intended to continue a little while at this island, tents were erected on the shore. About ten days afterwards one of the marines, who had been stationed as a sentinel at the tents, was enticed from his post by the natives, and deserted. Captain Cook, after considerable exertion, was enabled to recover him. Subsequently to this a midshipman and a seaman from the *Discovery* were missing ; and the captain was informed that many other persons had expressed an anxious desire to pass the remainder of their days in these favourite islands. However difficult the task might be, it was indispensably necessary for him to recover these deserters. Strong measures were adopted. He put into confinement the son, the daughter, and the son-in-law of Oreo, the chief of Ulietea, and told them that they should not be released till the deserters were delivered up. This had the desired effect ; the two men were brought back ; and no attempts of a similar kind were made.

The last of the Society Islands which Captain Cook visited was Bolabola. His chief view in passing over to this island was to procure from Opoony, its monarch, an anchor which M. de Bougainville, the French navigator, had lost at Otaheite, and which had been conveyed

to Bolabola. It was not from a want of anchors that Captain Cook was desirous of making the purchase, but to convert the iron of which it consisted into a fresh assortment of trading articles, his stock being now very much exhausted. The captain succeeded in his negotiation, and amply rewarded Opoony for giving up the anchor.

Captain Cook continued to the last his zeal for furnishing the natives of the South Sea with useful animals. At Bolabola, where there was already a ram, which had originally been left by the Spaniards at Otaheite, he carried ashore an ewe, that he had brought from the Cape of Good Hope ; and he rejoiced in the prospect of laying a foundation, by this present, for a breed of sheep in the island. He had previously left at Ulietea, under the care of Oreo, an English boar and sow, and two goats.

The navigators finally departed from the Society Islands on the twelfth of December. Frequently as these islands had been visited, it might have been imagined that their religious, political, and domestic regulations, manners, and customs, must by this time have been thoroughly understood. A great accession of knowledge was undoubtedly gained in the present voyage ; and yet it was confessed by Captain Cook, that his account of these was, in various respects, still imperfect ; and that he still continued a stranger to many of the most important institutions which prevailed there.

Although seventeen months had elapsed since Captain Cook's departure from England, during which time, though he had not, upon the whole, been unprofitably employed, he was sensible that, with respect to the principal object of his instructions, it was now only the commencement of his voyage ; and that, therefore, his attention was to be called anew to every circumstance which might contribute towards the safety of his people, and the ultimate success of the expedition. Accord-



ingly, he had examined into the state of the provisions whilst he was at the Society Islands; and as soon as he had left them, and had proceeded beyond the extent of his former discoveries, he ordered a survey to be taken of all the boatswain's and carpenter's stores which were in the ships, that he might be fully informed of their quantity and condition; and, by that means, know how to use them to the greatest advantage.



## NINETEENTH EVENING.

CONTINUATION OF CAPTAIN COOK'S THIRD VOYAGE ROUND  
THE WORLD.

IN the night between the twenty-second and twenty-third of December, 1777, the ships crossed the equator, in the longitude of two hundred and three degrees fifteen minutes west. The navigators still proceeded northward; and towards the end of January, 1778, they approached a cluster of islands, which Captain Cook afterwards named the Sandwich Islands, in honour of his friend and patron, the Earl of Sandwich, who was then the first lord of the Admiralty. On steering towards one of these islands, several of the inhabitants put off from the shore in canoes. When they came to the ships, the navigators were agreeably surprised to find that they spoke the language of Otaheite, and of the other islands which had lately been visited. These people were at first fearful of going on board the ship; but when some of them took courage and did so, they expressed a degree of astonishment at the objects they saw, which Captain Cook had never before witnessed.

One of the officers was sent with the boats to search for water at an island called by the natives Atooi. On attempting to land here, the inhabitants came down in such numbers, and were so violent in their endeavours

to seize the oars, muskets, and, in short, every thing they could lay hold of, that he was compelled to fire upon them; and one man was killed. When the ships were anchored the captain went on shore; and at the instant of landing, the collected body of the natives fell flat upon their faces, and continued in that posture, till by signs he prevailed with them to rise. The next day a trade was set on foot for hogs and potatoes, which the people of the island gave in exchange for nails and pieces of iron formed somewhat like chisels. So far was any obstruction from being experienced in obtaining water, that, on the contrary, the inhabitants assisted our men in rolling the casks to and from the pool; and readily performed whatever labour was required of them.

Affairs thus going on to the captain's satisfaction, he made an excursion into the country, accompanied by Mr. Anderson, the surgeon of the *Resolution*, and Mr. Webber, the draftsman; the former of whom was as well qualified to describe with the pen, as the latter was to represent with his pencil, whatever might occur worthy of observation. On the return of the commander, he had the satisfaction of finding that a brisk trade for pigs, fowls, and roots, was carrying on with the greatest good order, and without any attempt on the part of the natives either to cheat or steal. The rapacious disposition they at first displayed, was entirely corrected by their conviction that it could not be exercised with impunity. Among the articles which they brought to barter, the most remarkable was a particular sort of cloak and cap, that might be reckoned elegant even in countries where dress is eminently the object of attention. The cloak was richly adorned with red and yellow feathers, which in themselves were highly beautiful, and the newness and freshness of which added not a little to their beauty.

During the short stay of the vessels at this island, it was ascertained that the inhabitants were eaters of human

flesh. It was, however, understood that their enemies slain in battle were the sole objects of so abominable a custom. This people, when Captain Cook became better acquainted with them, appeared, in general, to possess a frank and cheerful disposition, equally removed from the fickle levity which distinguishes the natives of Otaheite, and the sedate character which is discernible among many of those of the other islands of the South Sea. The ingenuity of every thing manufactured by them was very great. The elegant form and polish of some of their fishing-hooks could not be exceeded by any European artist, notwithstanding the advantage both of his knowledge and tools. From what was seen of their agriculture, sufficient proofs were afforded that they are not novices in that art; and that the quantity and goodness of their vegetable productions were as much to be attributed to skilful culture, as to the natural fertility of their soil.

Of the Archipelago, which was denominated by Captain Cook the Sandwich Islands, there were five only with which, at this time, he became acquainted. Their names, as given by the natives, were Woahoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoorā. Had the Sandwich Islands been discovered by the Spaniards at an early period, that people would undoubtedly have taken advantage of so excellent a situation, and have made use of them as refreshing places to their ships, which sail annually from Acapulco for Manilla. Happy, too, would it have been for Lord Anson, if he had known that there existed a group of islands half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants could effectually have been supplied, and the different hardships to which he was exposed have been avoided.

On the second of February, the navigators pursued their course northward; in doing which the incidents they met with were almost entirely of a nautical kind. The coast of New Albion was seen on the seventh of March, the ships being then in the latitude of forty-four

degrees thirty-three minutes north, and in the longitude of two hundred and thirty-five degrees twenty minutes east. As the vessels ranged along the west side of America, Captain Cook gave names to several capes and headlands, which appeared in sight. At length, on the twenty-ninth, he came to an anchor in a bay which was called by the natives Nootka, and was thence named by Captain Cook Nootka Sound. The appearance of the country adjacent to this bay differed much from any that he had seen before. It was extremely mountainous, and the summits of the mountains were covered with snow; while the valleys between them, and the grounds on the sea-coast, were covered, to a considerable breadth, with high straight trees. Some of the natives came off to the ships in canoes, but they could not be prevailed with to venture on board. They, however, displayed a peaceable disposition; showed great readiness to part with any thing they had, in exchange for what was offered them; and expressed a strong desire for iron, appearing to be perfectly acquainted with the use of that metal. Shortly after this, a regular trade was commenced. The articles which the inhabitants offered to sale were the skins of various animals, such as bears, wolves, foxes, deer, racoons, polecats, martins; and, in particular, of the sea-otters. To these were added garments made of skins; another sort of clothing, formed from the bark of a tree; and various pieces of workmanship. The articles which the natives took in exchange for their commodities, were knives, chisels, pieces of iron and tin, nails, looking-glasses, buttons, or any kind of metal. Though commerce, in general, was carried on with mutual honesty, there were some among these people who were as much inclined to thievery as the islanders in the Southern Ocean. They were, at the same time, far more dangerous thieves; for, possessing sharp iron instruments, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or any other piece of iron from a rope, the moment that the backs of the English were turned;

and the dexterity with which they conducted their operations of this nature, frequently eluded the most cautious vigilance.

In the progress of the commerce with this people, they would deal for nothing but metal; and at length brass was so eagerly sought for, in preference to iron, that before the navigators quitted the place, scarcely a bit of it was left in the ships, excepting what belonged to the astronomical and other instruments. Whole suits of clothes were stripped of every button; bureaus were deprived of their furniture; copper kettles, tin canisters, candlesticks, and whatever of the like kind could be found, all went to wrack; so that these Americans became possessors of a greater medley and variety of things from our people, than any other nation that had been visited in the course of the voyage.

The grand operation of the navigators in their present station, was to put the ships into a complete repair for the further prosecution of the expedition; and while this business was carrying on, Captain Cook did not omit to examine every part of the adjacent coast.

In conjunction with Mr. Anderson, he displayed his usual sagacity and diligence in collecting whatever could be learned respecting the country and its inhabitants. The account that he has given is interesting, as it exhibits a picture of productions, people, and manners, very different from what had occurred in the Southern Ocean.

In the present abstract the time will not allow of an insertion of more than a short account of the inhabitants. Their persons are described to have been generally under the common stature; somewhat full or plump, though without being muscular. They were undoubtedly eaters of human flesh, yet they had no appearance of inhumanity of character. To our navigators they seemed a docile, courteous, and well-disposed people. The chief employments of the men were fishing and killing land or sea animals, for the sustenance of their families; while

the women were occupied in manufacturing flaxen or woollen garments, or in other domestic offices.

On the twenty-sixth the repairs of the ships having been completed, Captain Cook sailed from Nootka Sound. In the prosecution of his voyage northward, and back again to the Sandwich Islands, the facts that occurred were chiefly of a nautical kind; but from this long and important navigation a few incidents only can be selected.

At an inlet where the ships came to an anchor on the twelfth of May, and to which Captain Cook gave the appellation of Prince William's Sound, he had an opportunity not only of prosecuting his nautical and geographical discoveries, but of making considerable additions to his knowledge of the inhabitants of the American coast. The natives of this part of the coast had a near resemblance to the Esquimaux and Greenlanders. Their canoes, their weapons, and their instruments for fishing and hunting, were exactly the same, in point of materials and construction, that are used in Greenland; and the animals of the neighbourhood of Prince William's Sound are, in general, similar to those which are found at Nootka. Water-fowl were in considerable abundance; but torsk and halibut were almost the only kinds of fish that were caught. Vegetables were few in number; and the trees were chiefly different species of firs or pines. It is remarkable concerning this people, that there were found amongst them both beads and iron, which must have come from some civilized nation, though there was reason to suppose that our navigators were the first Europeans with whom they had ever held a direct communication. These articles they had probably obtained, through the intervention of the more inland tribes, from Hudson's Bay or the settlements on the Canadian lakes.

Some days after leaving this sound, the navigators came to an inlet, from which hopes were strongly entertained that it would be found to communicate either with the sea to the north, or with Baffin's or Hudson's Bay to the east; and, accordingly, it became the object of very



accurate and serious examination. The captain was soon persuaded that the expectations formed from it were groundless; yet it was requisite that this should be perfectly ascertained. A complete investigation of the inlet consequently took place, to the distance of seventy leagues from its entrance, and indubitable marks occurred of its being a river; but one of the most considerable ones that are known. In describing this inlet our commander had left a blank, which was not filled up with any particular name; and the Earl of Sandwich, after the return of the ships to England, directed that it should be called Cook's River. It was ascertained that a very beneficial fur-trade might be carried on with the inhabitants of this vast coast; but without a practicable northern passage, the situation is too remote to render it probable that Great Britain should hence ever be able to derive any material advantage.

The navigators cleared Cook's river on the sixth of June. On the nineteenth they passed a group of small islands; and two days after this, among some hills, on the main land, that towered above the clouds to an amazing height, one was discovered which had a volcano, that continually threw up vast columns of black smoke. This mountain was a complete cone, and the volcano was at the very summit.

In the prosecution of the voyage, on the twenty-sixth, there was so thick a fog, that the navigators could not see a hundred yards before them; notwithstanding which, as the weather was moderate, the captain did not intermit his course. At length, however, being alarmed at the sound of breakers on one side of the ship, he immediately brought her to, and came to an anchor; and the Discovery, by his order, did the same. A few hours afterwards, the fog having in some degree cleared away, it appeared that both the vessels had escaped a very imminent danger. Providence in the dark, had conducted them between rocks which the commander would not have ventured to pass through even in a clear day, and

had conveyed them to an anchoring-place as good as he could possibly have fixed upon, had the choice been entirely at his option.

On the twenty-seventh the vessels reached an island called Oonalashka, the inhabitants of which behaved with a degree of politeness and courtesy very unusual with savage tribes. From their general behaviour it was evident that these people were no strangers to Europeans, and to several of their customs. Their mode of feeding, however, was very different from what is customary in Europe. As the captain was one day walking along the shore, he beheld a group of the natives, of both sexes, who were seated on the grass, at a repast, consisting of raw fish; which they seemed to eat with as much relish as Englishmen would experience from a turbot, served up with the richest sauce.

When the navigators, on the third of August, had advanced to the latitude of sixty-two degrees thirty-four minutes, a great loss was sustained by them in the death of Mr. Anderson, the surgeon of the *Resolution*, who had been lingering under a consumption for more than twelve months. About a week after this Captain Cook came to an anchor under a point of land, to which he gave the name of Cape Prince of Wales, and which is remarkable by being the most western extremity of America hitherto explored. This extremity is distant from the eastern Cape of Siberia only thirteen leagues: and thus our commander had the glory of ascertaining the vicinity of the two continents, which before had only been conjectured from the reports of the neighbouring Asiatic inhabitants, and the imperfect observations of the Russian navigators.

Resuming his course he crossed over to the opposite Asiatic coast, and anchored in a bay which he named the Bay of St. Lawrence, belonging to the country of the Tschutski. After this, again approaching the shore of America, he proceeded towards the north, and on the eighteenth he reached the latitude of seventy degrees

forty-four minutes. The ships were now close to the edge of the ice, and unable to go any further. The ice was as compact as a wall, and was judged to be ten or twelve feet in height. Farther to the north, it appeared much higher. Its surface was extremely rugged, and in different places there were seen upon it pools of water. A prodigious number of sea-horses lay upon the ice, and some of them, on the nineteenth, were procured for food, there being at this time a want of fresh provisions. They were bad eating, but the voyagers lived upon them as long as they lasted; and most of the seamen preferred them to salt meat.

Captain Cook continued until the twenty-ninth, to traverse the Icy Sea beyond Behring's Strait, in various directions, and through numberless obstructions and difficulties. Every day the ice increased, so as to preclude all hope of attaining, at least during the present year, the grand object of the voyage, the discovery of a passage northward into the Atlantic. Indeed the season was now so far advanced, and the time in which the frost was expected to set in was so near at hand, that it would have been totally inconsistent with prudence to have made any further attempts till the ensuing summer. The attention, therefore, of the commander was now directed to other important and necessary concerns. It was of great consequence to meet with a place where the navigators might be supplied with wood and water. But the point which principally occupied the captain's thoughts was, how he should spend the winter, so as to make some improvements in geography and navigation, and, at the same time, to be in a condition to return to the north, in farther search of a passage, in the ensuing summer.

Before Captain Cook proceeded far to the south, he employed a considerable time in examining the sea and coasts in the neighbourhood of Behring's Strait, both on the side of Asia and America; and on the third of October he returned to the island of Oonalashka. Here

his first concern was to put the ships under the necessary repair. This was immediately afterwards commenced. The navigators had not been here many days, when Captain Cook and Captain Clerke each received a very singular present, of a rye loaf, or rather a pie in the form of a loaf, for it inclosed some salmon highly seasoned with pepper. And with each loaf was a note written in a language which no one was able to read. It was imagined that the presents came from some Russians in the neighbourhood; and therefore a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter, were sent to these unknown friends in return; it being rightly judged that such articles would be more acceptable than any thing besides which it was in the power of the navigators to bestow. An intelligent Englishman was sent with the bearer of the presents, for the purpose of obtaining further information. Two days afterwards this person returned with three Russian seamen. They had been stationed here to collect furs; and had on this island a dwelling-house, some storehouses, and a sloop of about thirty tons burthen. One of them was the master or mate of the vessel, and they all appeared to be sensible and well-behaved persons. There was, however, great difficulty in communicating with them, arising from the want of an interpreter. From a very intelligent Russian, who landed at Oonalashka on the fourteenth, Captain Cook obtained the sight of two manuscript charts of these seas, and was permitted to copy them. By this gentleman he had an opportunity of forwarding letters to England. They were conveyed from Kamtschatka overland to Petersburgh, and thence conveyed to London by one of the ships that frequented that port.

While the ships lay at Oonalashka, the voyagers did not neglect to make diligent inquiry into the productions of the island, and the general manners of the inhabitants. On these, it is not necessary here to enlarge. There is one circumstance, however, so honourable to the natives, that it must not be omitted. They were to

all appearance the most peaceable and inoffensive people our commander had ever met with; and, with respect to honesty, they might have served as a pattern to countries that are in the highest state of civilization.

All things being ready for his departure, Captain Cook left Oonalashka on the twenty-sixth, and sailed for the Sandwich Islands; it being his intention to pass a few months there, and then to direct his course to Kamtschatka, so as to endeavour to reach that country by the middle of May in the ensuing summer. On the thirtieth of November he arrived at Owyhæe, one of the Sandwich Islands, and one which appeared to him of greater extent and importance than any of the islands that had yet been visited in this part of the world. He occupied nearly seven weeks in sailing round and examining its coast. Whilst he was thus employed, the inhabitants came off, from time to time, in their canoes, and readily engaged in traffic with the voyagers. In the conduct of this business, the behaviour of the islanders was entirely free from suspicion and reserve. Not even the people of Otaheite, with whom he had been so intimately and repeatedly connected, had displayed such a full confidence in the integrity and good treatment of the English as these.

On the sixteenth of January, 1779, canoes arrived in such numbers from all parts, that there were not fewer than a thousand about the two ships, most of them crowded with people, and well laden with hogs, and other productions of the island. It was a satisfactory proof of their friendly intentions, that there was not a single person amongst them who had with him a weapon of any kind: trade and curiosity alone appearing to be the motives which actuated their conduct. Among such multitudes, however, as, at times, were on board, it will not be deemed surprising, that some should have betrayed a thievish disposition. One of them took out of the Resolution a boat's rudder, and made off with it so speedily that it could not be recovered. Captain Cook

directed two or three muskets, and as many four pounders, to be fired over the canoe in which the rudder had been carried off; but, at the report of these, the surrounding multitude of the natives appeared to be more surprised than terrified. At night several of the Indians requested permission to sleep on board the ships; but in this request curiosity was not the sole motive; for it was found, next morning, that various articles were missing. On this account the captain determined not to entertain so many persons another night.



The ships were anchored on the seventeenth in a bay which was called by the inhabitants Karakakooa. In the whole course of his voyages, Captain Cook had never seen so many people assembled in one place as he saw on this occasion; for, besides the multitude that came off in canoes, all the shore of the bay was covered with spectators, and many hundreds were swimming round the ships like shoals of fish. The reception which he met with from the natives was flattering in the highest degree. They expressed their joy by singing and shout-



ing, and by exhibiting a variety of wild and extravagant gestures. Among the crowds who now flocked upon the decks of the ships, blocking up almost every part, and being much superior in numbers to the English, were three chiefs, who invited Captain Cook, and the gentlemen accompanying the expedition, to the shore. They went, and were received with very peculiar and extraordinary ceremonies; ceremonies which indicated the highest respect on the part of the natives, and which, indeed, seemed to fall little short of adoration. After this the captain was introduced to Terreeoboo, king of the island, who received him in the kindest and most friendly manner imaginable. In the progress of the intercourse which was maintained between the voyagers and the natives, the quiet and inoffensive behaviour of the latter took away every apprehension of danger; so that the English trusted themselves among them at all times, and in all situations. The instances of kindness and civility which our people experienced from them were so numerous, that they could not easily be recounted. A society of priests, in particular, displayed a generosity and munificence, of which no equal example had hitherto been given: for they furnished a constant supply of hogs and vegetables to the navigators, without demanding a return, or even hinting at it in the most distant manner. But the satisfaction that was derived from the generosity and hospitality of the inhabitants, was frequently interrupted by the propensity of many of them to stealing; and this circumstance was the more distressing, as it sometimes obliged the commander and the other officers to have recourse to acts of severity, which they would willingly have avoided, if the necessity of the case had not absolutely called for them.

Though the kind and liberal behaviour of the natives continued without intermission, the king and his chiefs began, at length, to be very inquisitive respecting the time in which the voyagers were to take their departure.

It appeared, however, that Terreeoboo had no other view in his inquiries than a desire to make a sufficient preparation for dismissing the navigators with presents suitable to the respect and kindness towards them which he had always displayed. For, on his being informed that they were to leave the island in a day or two, it was observed, that a kind of proclamation was immediately made through the villages, requiring the people to bring in their hogs and vegetables, that the king might present them to the English on their quitting the country. Accordingly, on the third of February, being the day preceding the time which had been fixed for the sailing of the ships, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King to attend him. On their arrival, they found the ground covered with parcels of cloth, at a small distance from which lay an immense quantity of vegetables, and near them was a large herd of hogs. At the close of the visit, the greater part of the cloth, and the whole of the hogs and vegetables, were given by Terreeoboo to the captain and his officers, who were astonished at the value and magnificence of the present; for it far exceeded every thing of the kind which they had seen either at the Friendly or Society Islands,

Early the next day, the ships sailed out of Karakakooa bay; and on this occasion Terreeoboo gave a fresh proof of his friendship for Captain Cook, by sending after him a large present of hogs and vegetables. It was the captain's design, before he visited the other Sandwich islands, to finish the survey of Owhyhee, that he had begun. His object in this was, if possible, to find a harbour better sheltered from the weather than the bay he had just left. Two days afterwards a gale of wind sprung up, in which the *Resolution* had the misfortune of injuring her foremast in so dangerous a manner, that he was obliged to return to Karakakooa. On the return of the ships several canoes approached, in which were many of the former acquaintance of the navigators. In the afternoon, a chief of the first rank, and nearly related

to the king, went on board the *Discovery*. He was dressed in a rich feathered cloak, which he seemed to have carried for sale, but he would part with it for nothing except iron daggers. Nine were given to him for it; and being pleased with his reception, he and his attendants slept on board the ship that night.

After this, preparation was made for landing the foremast of the *Resolution*, that it might be repaired on shore; and, on the ensuing morning, the king himself went to visit Captain Cook on board the *Resolution*. He was attended by a numerous train of persons, some of whom bore presents that were designed for the captain. The next day, February the thirteenth, the ships were visited by the natives in great numbers; the *Resolution's* foremast was landed, and tents were erected in their former situation on the shore. An Indian was this day detected in stealing the armourer's tongs from the forge, for which he received a severe flogging, and was sent out of the ship. Notwithstanding the example made of this man, in the afternoon another had the audacity to snatch the tongs and a chisel from the same place, with which he jumped overboard, and swam for the shore. The master and a midshipman were instantly despatched after him in the small cutter. The Indian seeing himself pursued, made for a canoe; his countrymen took him on board, and paddled as swiftly as they could towards the shore. Several muskets were fired at them, but without effect, for they soon got out of reach of the shots. Captain Cook, who was then on shore, endeavoured to intercept the landing of the thief; but he was led out of the way by some of the natives, who had officiously intruded themselves as guides.

This was the commencement of a very fatal misunderstanding with the natives. In the night, one of the boats belonging to the *Discovery* was carried off; and many hostile indications on the part of the natives were remarked. These determined Captain Cook to secure, if possible, the person of the king as the most effectual

step that could be taken for the recovery of the boat, and restoring amity betwixt the English and the inhabitants. Accompanied by the lieutenant of marines, a serjeant, corporal, and seven private men; having at the same time armed several men in the ship's launch and pinnace, he undauntedly proceeded to the residence of the king. The Indians flocked around him, as before, and showed him the customary marks of respect, by prostrating themselves on the ground. At an interview with the king, the captain took him by the hand, in a friendly manner, and asked him to go on board the *Resolution*, to which he readily consented. A short time after this several of the Indians were observed to be arming themselves with long spears, clubs, and daggers, and putting on thick mats, which they used as armour. This hostile appearance increased, and became the more alarming, on the arrival of two men, with news that a chief called Kareemoo, had been killed by the men in one of the *Discovery's* boats. Captain Cook being at this time surrounded by a great crowd, thought his situation somewhat hazardous. He therefore ordered the lieutenant of marines to march his small party to the water-side, where the boats lay, within a few yards of the shore: the Indians readily made a lane for them to pass, and did not offer to interrupt them. The distance they had to go might be about fifty or sixty yards. Captain Cook followed, having hold of Terreeboo's hand, who accompanied him very willingly: he was attended by his wife, two sons, and several chiefs. His younger son went immediately into the pinnace, expecting his father to follow; but the latter had no sooner arrived at the water-side, than his wife threw her arms about his neck, and, with the assistance of two chiefs, forced him to sit down by the side of a double canoe. Captain Cook expostulated with them, but to no purpose: they would not suffer the king to proceed, telling him that he would be put to death if he went on board the ship.

While the king was in this situation, another of the

chiefs was observed lurking near, with an iron dagger partly concealed under his cloak. His attention, apparently, was to stab either Captain Cook, or the lieutenant of marines. The latter proposed to fire at him, but the captain would not permit it. The chief closed upon them, on which the officer struck him with his musket, and compelled him to retire. Captain Cook seeing the tumult increase, and that the Indians grew more daring and resolute, found that it would be impossible to carry off the king by force, without sacrificing many of his people. He therefore paused a little, and was on the point of giving orders to reembark, when a man threw a stone at him. This Captain Cook returned by a discharge of small shot. The man brandished his spear, and was about to dart it at the captain, when the latter knocked him down with his musket. He expostulated strongly with the most forward of the crowd upon their turbulent behaviour; and now only sought to secure a safe embarkation for his small party, which was closely pressed by a body of several thousand people. One man was observed behind a double canoe, in the action of darting his spear at Captain Cook. He therefore was forced to fire at him in his own defence, but he happened to kill another close to him, equally forward in the tumult. The serjeant observing that the captain had missed the man he aimed at, received orders to fire at him, which he did and killed him. By this time, the impetuosity of the Indians was somewhat repressed. They fell back in a body, and seemed staggered; but being pushed on by those behind, they returned to the charge, and poured a volley of stones among the marines, who, without waiting for orders, returned it with a general discharge of musketry. This was instantly followed by a fire from the boats. Captain Cook waved his hand to the boats, and called to them to cease firing, and to come nearer in to receive the marines. The officer in the pinnace immediately brought that vessel as close to the shore as he could, notwithstanding the

showers of stones that fell among his people ; but the lieutenant who commanded in the launch, instead of pulling in to the assistance of Captain Cook, withdrew his boat farther off, at the very moment that every thing seems to have depended upon the timely exertions of those in the boats. By his own account, he mistook the signal : but be that as it may, this circumstance appears to have decided the fatal turn of the affair, and to have removed every chance which remained with Captain Cook of escaping with his life. The marines several times fired upon the crowd, but to little purpose, for the Indians soon rushed among them, and forced them into the water, where four of them were killed. Captain Cook was now the only Englishman remaining on shore. He was observed to be making towards the pinnace, holding his left hand against the back of his head, to guard it from the stones which were thrown at him, and carrying his musket under his other arm. An Indian was seen following him, but with caution and timidity ; for he stopped once or twice, as if undetermined to proceed. At last he advanced upon him unawares, and with a large club or common stake, gave him a blow on the back of the head, and then precipitately retreated. The stroke seemed to have stunned Captain Cook : he staggered a few paces, then fell on his hand and one knee, and dropped his musket. As he was rising, and before he could recover his feet. another Indian stabbed him in the back of the neck with an iron dagger. He then fell into the water, in a place where it was about knee deep ; and others immediately crowded upon him, and endeavoured to keep him under ; but struggling very strongly with them, he got his head up, and casting his look towards the pinnace, seemed to solicit assistance. Though the boat was not above five or six yards distant from him, yet from the crowded and confused state of the crew, it seems it was not in their power to save him. The Indians got him under again, but in deeper water. He was, however, able to get his head up once more ;



and, being almost spent in the struggle, he naturally turned to the rock, and was endeavouring to support himself by it, when a savage gave him a blow with a club, and he was seen alive no more. They hauled him up lifeless on the rocks, where they seemed to take a savage pleasure in using every possible barbarity to his dead body, snatching the daggers out of each other's hands, to have the horrid satisfaction of piercing the fallen victim of their barbarous rage; and after they had thus glutted their revenge, they carried it off in triumph. Captain Clerke, who succeeded to the command of the expedition, made every effort to recover the remains of Captain Cook; but his bones only could be obtained, and these were committed to the deep, amidst the heartfelt grief of all who had served with him.



*Mr. Allen.*—It has justly been observed that the death of this valuable man was a loss to mankind in general; and particularly to be deplored by every nation that

respects useful accomplishments, that honours science, and loves the benevolent and amiable affections of the heart. Our sorrow for this great loss is further aggravated by the reflection that it was occasioned by the enmity of a people, from whom, indeed, it might have been dreaded, but from whom it was not deserved. For, actuated always by the most attentive care and tender compassion for the Indians in general, he was ever assiduously endeavouring, by kind treatment, to dissipate their fears, and court their friendship; overlooking their thefts and treacheries, and frequently interposing, at the hazard of his life, to protect them from the sudden resentment of his own injured people.

*Frederic.*—Indeed, sir, there is hardly a corner of the earth, however remote or savage, that ought not long to remember his benevolence and humanity. The grateful Indians of many of the islands of the Pacific Ocean will, in time to come, point to the herds grazing on their fertile plains, and relate to their children how the first stock of them was introduced: and the name of Cook will long be held in veneration by them.

*Lady Irwin.*—It is truly painful to reflect, that Captain Cook seems to have fallen a sacrifice, merely from want of being properly supported. This appears to me a circumstance singularly to be lamented with respect to him, who had ever been conspicuous for his care of all those under his command; and who seems, even to the latest moments of his life, to have paid as much attention to their preservation as his own.

*Sir Charles.*—With regard to the inhabitants of Owhyhee, by whom the melancholy deed was perpetrated, let me, in mitigation of their crime, observe, that they do not seem to have acted from any preconcerted plan, and that they did not purposely seek to quarrel with the English. The event appears to have been altogether as unexpected and unforeseen to them, as it was to ourselves. Thieving, which gave rise to the whole, they were equally guilty of in the first and second visit of the

navigators. It was the cause of every misunderstanding that happened. Their petty thefts were generally overlooked, but sometimes slightly punished; the boat which they at last ventured to take away, was an object of no small magnitude to people in the situation of the navigators, who could not possibly replace her; and it was not therefore slightly to be given up. They had no other chance of recovering her, but by getting the person of the king into their possession. On attempting to do that, the natives became alarmed for his safety, and naturally opposed those whom they deemed his enemies; and it was in the sudden conflict that ensued, that the English had the unspeakable misfortune of losing their excellent commander, in the manner already related. It is in this light that the affair has always appeared to me; entirely accidental, and not in the least to have been owing to any previous offence received, or any jealousy, as some persons have imagined, which had been excited in the hearts of the natives.

*Louisa.*—After the death of Captain Cook, may I ask, sir, who succeeded to the command of the expedition?

*Sir Charles.*—Captain Clerke, who had been the commander of the *Discovery*, succeeded of course, as being the next in rank. He now removed on board the *Resolution*: and, by him, Mr. Gore was appointed captain of the *Discovery*.

*Frederic.*—Before we separate for the evening, I will request permission to read a short account which I have drawn up of the events that occurred in the conclusion of this lamented voyage.

*Mr. Allen.*—In the mean time I will say a few words relative to the character, the talents, and conduct of Captain Cook.

In his manners he was plain, simple, and manly. He was an excellent husband and father, a sincere and steady friend. The benevolence and humanity of his disposition were peculiarly remarkable. They were apparent from his treatment of his men, through all his voyages;

and from his conduct towards the natives of all the countries which were discovered by him. The health, the convenience, and, as far as it could be admitted, the enjoyment of those under his command, were the constant objects of his attention; and he was invariably anxious to ameliorate the condition of the inhabitants of the several islands and places which he visited. With regard to their thieveries, he candidly apologised for, and overlooked many offences which others would have punished; and when he felt impelled to proceed to any acts of severity, he never exerted them without reluctance and concern.

With respect to his talents, they were undeniably of the most useful kind. He had a capacious and penetrating mind; and all his designs were accordingly bold and extensive. When these were formed, he never expressed a doubt respecting their execution; for the same perspicuity and orderly arrangement of thought which enabled him to form the designs, also enabled him to devise the most simple and effectual modes of executing them. In the execution he was equally distinguished; no difficulty perplexed, no danger appalled him. The talents and knowledge which he possessed were always completely at his command, when they were most needed. And for great designs he was also qualified by the constitution of his body, which was inured to labour, and capable of supporting the greatest fatigue and hardships. In addition to a consummate acquaintance with navigation, Captain Cook possessed a knowledge of other sciences. In this respect, the ardour of his mind rose above the disadvantages of a very confined education. His progress in the different branches of mathematics, and particularly in astronomy, became so eminent, that, at length, he was able to take the lead in making the necessary observations of this kind, in the course of his voyages. He attained, likewise, to such a degree of proficiency in general learning, and in the art of composition, as to be able to express himself with a

manly clearness and propriety, and to become respectable as the narrator, as well as the performer, of great actions.

*Frederic.*—Another trait, which was peculiarly conspicuous in the character of Captain Cook, was the perseverance with which he pursued the noble objects to which his life was devoted. In this he scarcely ever had an equal, and never a superior. Nothing could divert him from the points he aimed at: and he persisted in the prosecution of them, through difficulties and obstructions, which would have deterred minds even of considerable strength and firmness.

*Louisa.*—May I inquire what description has been given of the person of Captain Cook?

*Sir Charles.*—In stature he is described to have been somewhat above the common size; and, though a good looking man, he was plain both in address and appearance. His head was small; his hair, which was a dark brown, he wore tied behind. His face was full of expression; his nose exceedingly well shaped; his eyes, which were small, and of a brown cast, were quick and piercing, and his eyebrows prominent; which gave to his countenance altogether an air of austerity.

*Lady Irwin.*—The services performed by Captain Cook have ranked his name above that of any navigator either of ancient or modern times.

*Mr. Allen.*—Yes, madam; his name is held in the highest estimation not in his own country only, but in every other; and honours of various kinds were bestowed upon his memory by several foreign nations.

*Louisa.*—Mr. Allen has spoken of him as having been an excellent husband and father. What family did he leave? I hope some provision was made for them after his death.

*Mr. Allen.*—In the year 1762 he had married a lady whose name was Batts, an amiable and deserving woman. He had by her six children, but of these three sons only survived him. They were all brought up in the naval service. One of them was lost in a hurricane at sea,

and the other two fell honourably in the cause of their country. On the widow a pension of two hundred pounds a year for her life, and on each of the sons a pension of twenty-five pounds a year, was settled by the British government.

*Frederic*.—But these, sir, were not all the advantages which they derived from the services of this great navigator. In the publication of the voyage to the Pacific Ocean, the charts and plates were provided at the expense of government; and of the large profit which occurred from the sale of the work, one half was secured in trust to the use of Mrs. Cook, during her life, and, after her death, to be divided amongst her children.

*Sir Charles*.—We must terminate the discussion of this evening with the abstract, which Frederic has promised us, of the incidents that occurred in the voyage to England after the unhappy catastrophe with which he concluded his last narrative.

Frederic consequently read as follows :

NARRATIVE OF EVENTS WHICH OCCURRED SUBSEQUENTLY TO  
THE DEATH OF CAPTAIN COOK.

AFTER Captain Clerke, upon whom the command of the expedition devolved, had left the fatal island of Owhyhee, he considered it his duty to endeavour to execute the plans of discovery that had been laid down by his lamented predecessor. He consequently coasted several others of the Sandwich Islands ; and finally left them on the fifteenth of March, 1779. The ships now proceeded towards Kamtschatka ; and, in their course, the Resolution sprung a leak so bad, that at one time the whole space between the decks was deluged with water. On the twenty-third the mountains of Kamtschatka, covered with snow, were within view. The weather was now so severe, that the ship appeared like a complete mass of ice, and the rigging was so incrustated with it, that the different ropes were more than double their usual thickness.



Two days after the discovery of Kamtschatka, when off the entrance of Awatska Bay, the Resolution lost sight of the Discovery. The Resolution entered the bay, and soon afterwards the town of Petropaulowski was within view. It consisted of a few miserable log-houses, and some conical huts raised on poles, amounting in all to about thirty; yet here the voyagers were received and treated with feelings of humanity, joined to a greatness of mind and elevation of sentiment which would have done honour to any nation. On the first of May the Discovery also entered the harbour.

The part of the coast near which the ships were anchored, was wholly incapable of furnishing them with provisions; but application for these having been made to the governor of Kamtschatka, they were supplied in the most liberal manner imaginable.

On the fifth of July the navigators passed through Behring's Straits. They first sailed along the Asiatic coast, and then stretched over to that of America, with a view of exploring the sea between the latitudes of sixty-eight and sixty-nine degrees. But in this attempt they were disappointed; on the seventh their farther progress was stopped by a large and compact field of ice connected with the land. On the ninth they had sailed nearly forty leagues westward, along the edge of the ice, without seeing any opening, and had therefore no prospect of advancing farther north. Until the twenty-seventh, however, they continued to seek a passage, first on the American and then on the Asiatic side: but they were not able to penetrate farther north than seventy degrees thirty-three minutes; five leagues short of the point to which they had advanced in the preceding season.

At one time, in attempting to penetrate towards the north-west, the Discovery was in a very dangerous situation. She became so entangled by several large pieces of ice, that her way was stopped, and she suffered much injury. A change of wind, however, taking place in the

afternoon, the ice began to separate, and the navigators, setting all their sails, forced a passage through it.

Finding that a further advance to the north, as well as a nearer approach to either continent, was obstructed by a sea blocked up with ice, Captain Clerke determined to lose no more time in the pursuit of what seemed to him unattainable. After having repaired the damages which the vessel had sustained, he resolved to explore the coast of Japan, and thence proceed to Europe. The delight and satisfaction that were experienced, at this declaration, by the crews of both ships, notwithstanding the tedious voyage they had still to make, were as freely entertained, and perhaps as fully enjoyed, as if they had already been in sight of the Land's End.

On the thirty-first they repassed Behring's Straits. Captain Clerke's health now rapidly declined. On the seventeenth of August, he was no longer able to rise from his bed; and five days afterwards he died of a consumption, which had commenced before he left England, and of which he had lingered during the whole voyage. The command of the expedition now devolved upon Captain Gore, who removed into the *Resolution*, and appointed Mr. King to the command of the *Discovery*. The body of Captain Clerke was interred near the town of Petropaulowski, on Sunday, the twenty-ninth, with all the solemnity and honours which the voyagers could bestow. The place of interment was under a tree on the north side of the harbour, a spot which they were informed was designed as the site of a new church intended to be erected.

After the navigators had sufficiently repaired both the vessels, and had obtained an additional supply of stores, water, and provisions, they left Kamtschatka, resolving to run along the Kurile Islands, and to survey the eastern coasts of those of Japan, previously to returning homeward. On the twelfth of October they lost sight of Kamtschatka. With respect to the projected examination of the Kurile islands they were entirely disappointed, in

consequence of a succession of stormy weather, which drove them entirely out of their intended course: and, on the twenty-sixth, at day-break, they descried high land towards the west of the vessels. This was either the island of Japan, or one of a cluster of islands near Japan; but, being unable to approach it, from contrary winds and opposing currents, Captain Gore, as the winter was now approaching, resolved immediately to proceed to China.

In the forenoon of the twenty-ninth of November, the ships passed several Chinese fishing-boats; and the sea was covered with the wrecks of boats that had been lost, as it was conjectured, in the late boisterous weather. The navigators were now in latitude twenty-two degrees one minute south. On the following day, they ran along the Lema Islands, and took a Chinese pilot on board; and at nine o'clock in the morning of the first of December they anchored at the distance of three leagues from Macao. Captain King was sent to Canton to obtain supplies of provisions and stores. The purchase of these was completed by the twenty-sixth, and the whole were forwarded to the ships on the following day. The navigators had brought from Kamtschatka a considerable quantity of furs, particularly those of sea-otters. These were sold to the Chinese, and produced altogether a sum not much short of two thousand pounds sterling. The barter that was thus carried on with the Chinese, produced a very whimsical change in the dress of the crews. On their arrival near Macao, nothing could exceed the ragged appearance both of the younger officers and the seamen; almost the whole of their original stock of European clothes having long been worn out, or patched up with skins, or the various manufactures they had met with in the course of their discoveries. These were now mixed and eked out with the gaudiest silks and cottons of China.

On account of the war between England and America, and with France and Spain as her allies, of which the

navigators received intelligence at Canton, they put themselves in the best posture of defence that they were able ; in the *Resolution* they mounted sixteen guns, and in the *Discovery* ten. They had reason, however, to believe, from the generosity of their enemies, that these precautions were superfluous ; for they were informed that instructions had been found on board all the French ships of war captured in Europe, directing their commanders, in case of falling in with the ships that sailed under the command of Captain Cook, to suffer them to proceed without molestation ; and the same orders were also said to have been given by the American Congress in the vessels employed in their service. In return for these liberal concessions, Captain Gore resolved to refrain from availing himself of any opportunities of capture, and to preserve, throughout the remainder of the voyage, the strictest neutrality.

On the twelfth of January, 1780, the navigators got under sail from Macao ; on the nineteenth, they saw Pulo Sapata, and on the twentieth, descried Pulo Condore, and anchored in the harbour at the south-west end of the island. Here they procured eight buffaloes, and other refreshments. The navigators remained at Pulo Condore till the twenty-eighth of January, when they unmoored, and proceeded on their homeward passage, passing through the Straits of Banca and Sunda, without any occurrence worthy of particular remark. From the time of their entering the Straits of Banca, they began to experience the powerful effects of that pestilential climate ; and malignant putrid fevers, with obstinate coughs and dysenteries, prevailed amongst the crews ; happily, however, without one fatal termination.

On the eighteenth of February they left the Straits of Sunda. In the night, between the twenty-fifth and twenty-sixth, they experienced a violent storm, during which almost every sail they had bent was split to rags ; and the next day they were obliged to bend their last

set of sails, and to knot and splice the rigging, their cordage being all expended.

On the seventh of April, they saw the land of Africa ; on the evening of the twelfth, they dropped anchor in False Bay, and the next morning stood into Simon's Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope.

Having completed their victualling, and furnished themselves with the necessary supply of naval stores, the navigators sailed out of the bay on the ninth of May. On the twelfth of June they passed the equator for the fourth time during the voyage. On the twelfth of August they made the western coast of Ireland, and, after a fruitless attempt to put into Port Galway, they were obliged, by strong southerly winds, to steer northward ; and on the twenty-sixth of August, both the ships came to an anchor at Stromness, in the Orkneys, whence Captain King was despatched, by Captain Gore, to acquaint the Board of Admiralty of their arrival. On the first of October, the ships arrived safe at the Nore, after an absence of four years, two months, and twenty-two days.

*Sir Charles.*—From letters which I have this morning received, I find it will be requisite for me to leave home for a few days. The second series of our conversations has now terminated, and this temporary absence will not be any important interruption to our proceedings. It may, indeed, in one respect, be rendered advantageous ; for leisure will thus be afforded for Frederic and Edmund to prepare themselves for a new series of conversations relative to eminent travellers.

*Edmund.*—Would it not be preferable, sir, to continue the discussions on the voyagers from the time of Captain Cook to the present, before we commence with the lives of travellers ?

*Sir Charles.*—There are two reasons, Edmund, why it would not. In the first place, I think that a contemporary perusal of the writings of travellers and voy-

agers would more tend to expand your knowledge and improve your minds, than by reading them without a reference to each other. In the next place, you would be able to obtain very little biographical knowledge concerning individuals who have flourished since the time of Captain Cook.

*Frederic.*—We have already failed in two or three instances anterior to the life of Captain Cook ; for we have not been able to obtain any memoirs of Captains James, Rogers, Wallis, and Carteret, and we should of course have greater difficulty were we to attempt the discussion of characters.

*Mr. Allen.*—I perfectly agree in opinion with Sir Charles Irwin, that it is desirable at present that you should proceed with the lives of the travellers. These you will terminate about the same period as that of the lives we have just concluded. I have a further project in view, which I will then detail to you.

THE END.



